



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES

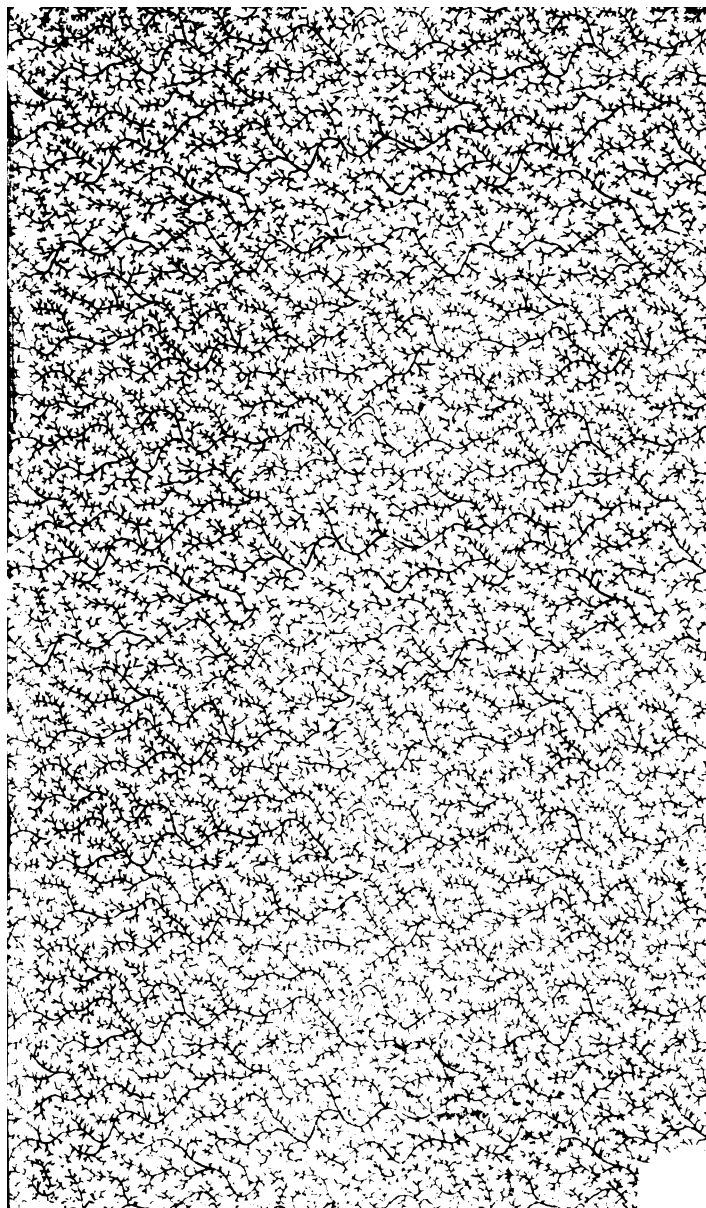


3 3433 07586559 6

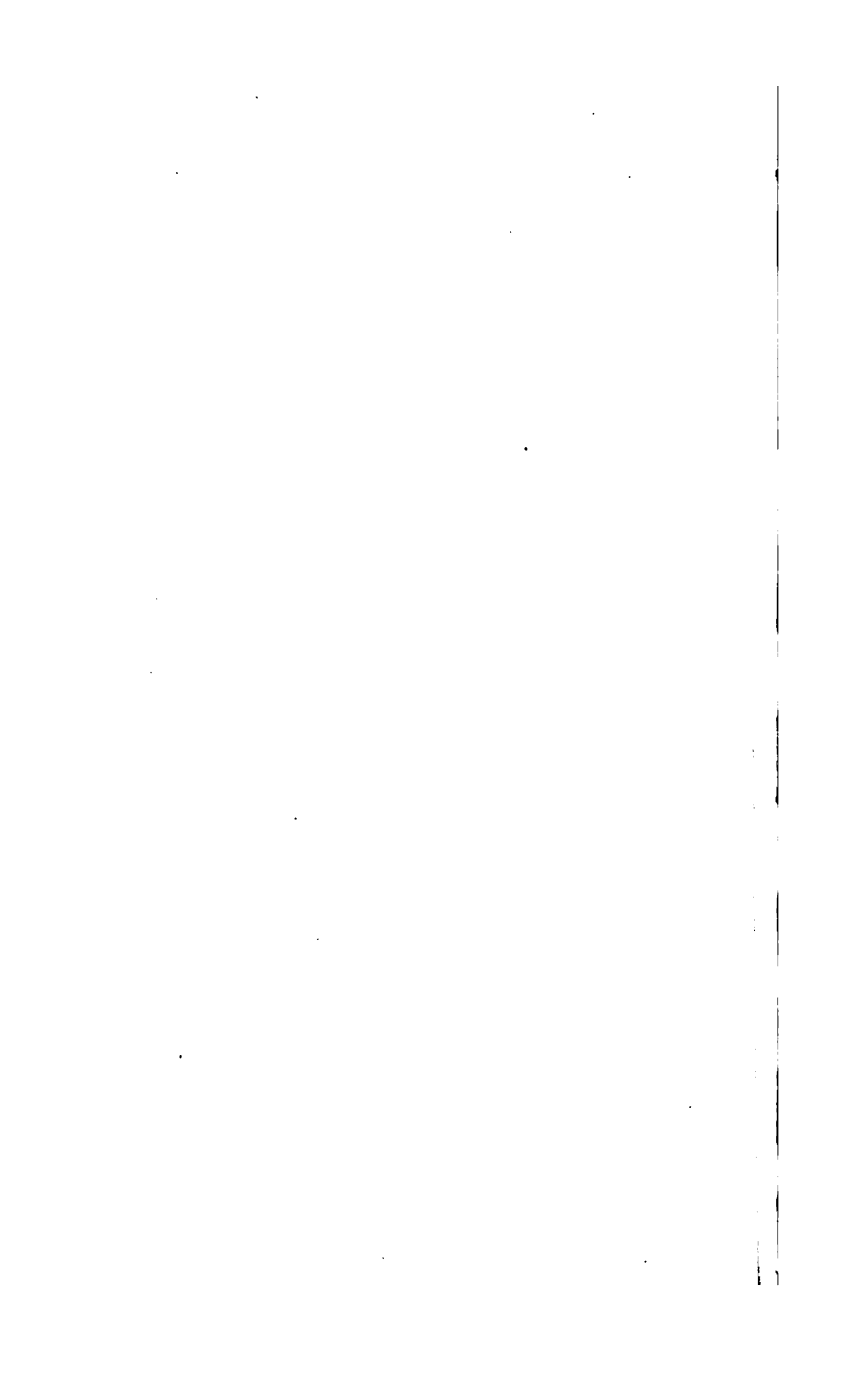
OX LIBRARY

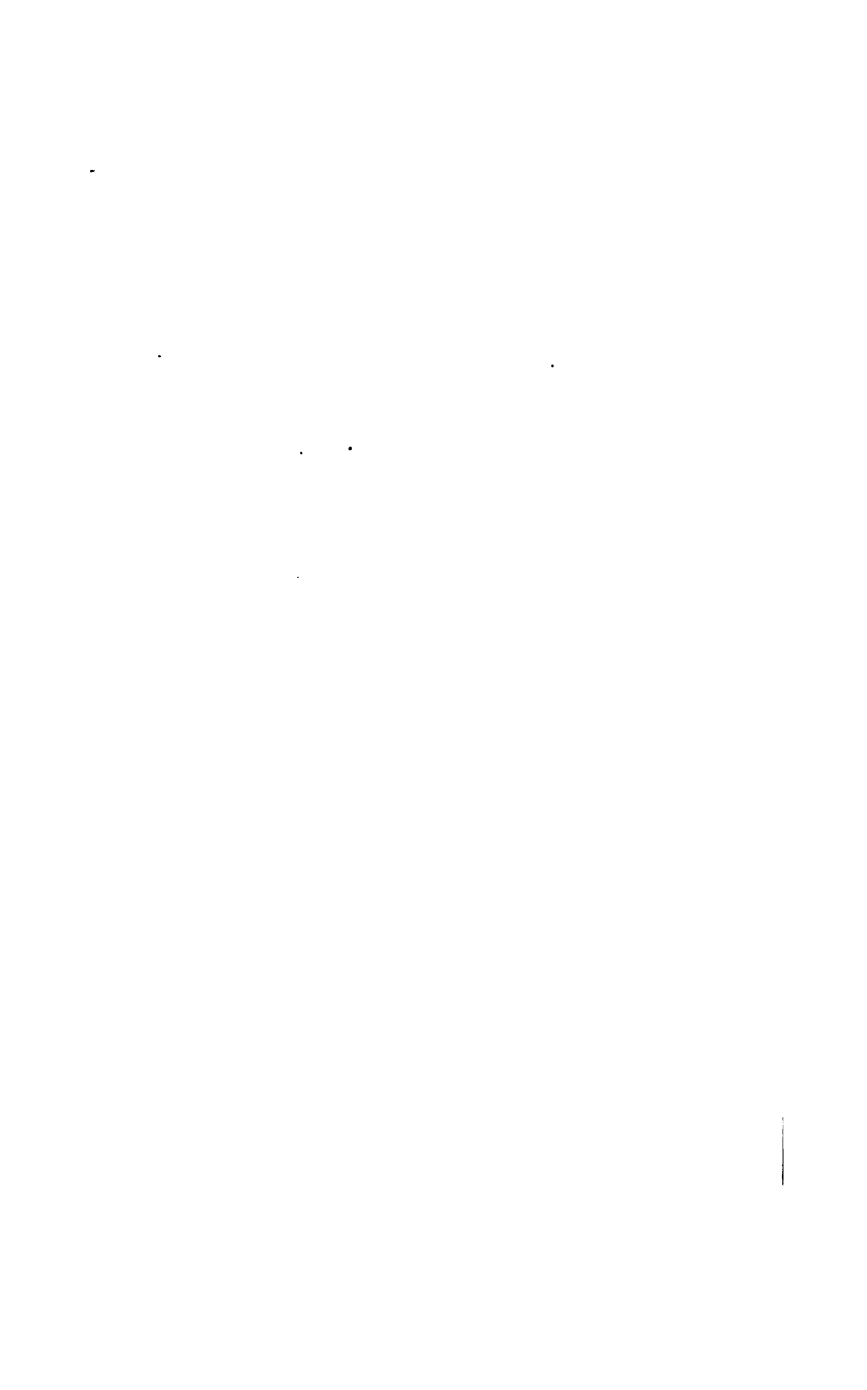


Winch Collection.  
presented in 1878.



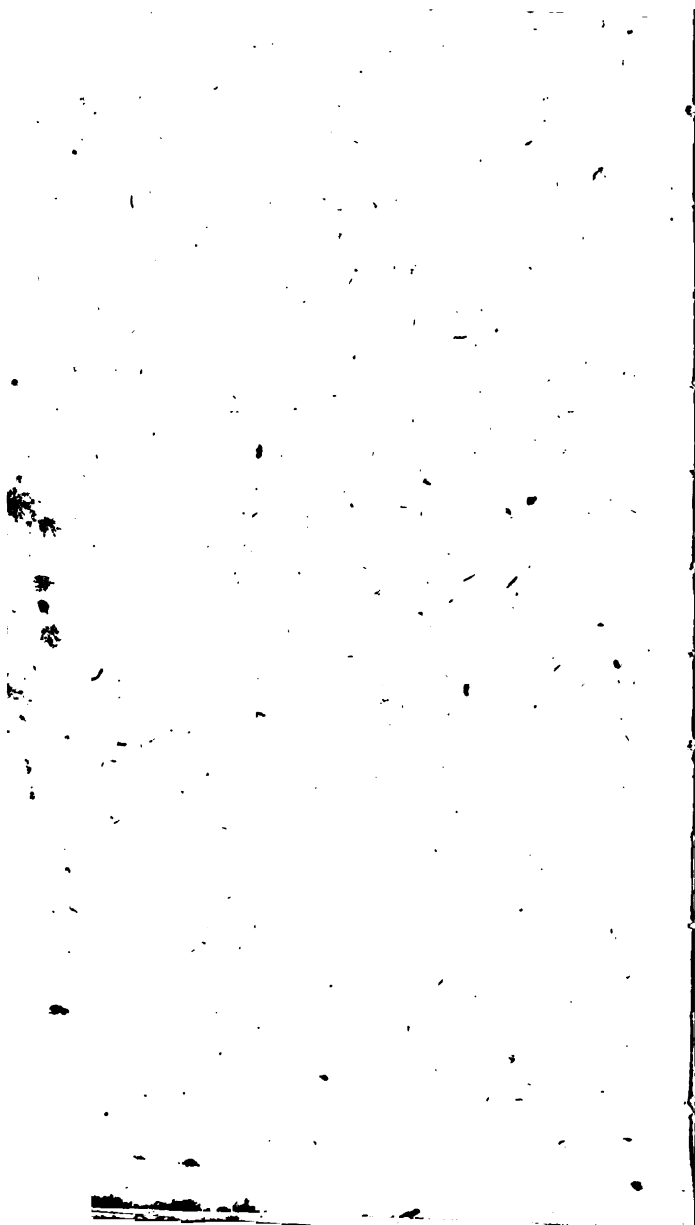








Blas.



\*\*\*\*\*

THE  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
DON BLAS  
OF  
SANTILANE,  
SON OF  
GIL BLAS.

\*\*\*\*\*

Price Two Shillings and Six-pence.

THE  
ADVENTURES

OF

DOMINION

AND THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE

OF THE

REVENUE



THE  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
*Alfonso de Lencastre*  
DON BLAS  
OF  
SANTILANE,  
The SON of  
GIL BLAS:  
BEING  
A SUPPLEMENT,  
OR,  
FIFTH VOLUME,  
Of the CELEBRATED WORK of  
Monsieur *LE SAGE*.

---

THE SECOND EDITION.  
Translated from the SPANISH ORIGINAL.

---

LONDON:

Printed and sold at LOWNDS'S CIRCULATING  
LIBRARY, the First House from the Middle of  
EXETER EXCHANGE. 1756.

JNE

ADAMANT

2A 18 110

2A 18 110



LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK

LENOX LIBRARY

NEW YORK



# THE CONTENTS

## CHAP. I.

**T**HE Education of Alphonso: The Arrival of Scipio.

## CHAP. II.

*Ingratitude punish'd.*

## CHAP. III.

*Continuation of the Story of the Countess D'Albano, and Don Pedro de Patillos.*

## CHAP. IV.

*The Adventures of Senior Scipio; his Voyage to la Vera Cruz; his Journey from thence to Mexico. The Story of Count Xerez, and Don Alphonso de Alarcas, whom Scipio became acquainted with in the Journey.*

## CHAP. V.

*Which is in the Reader's Option to pass by or peruse.*

## CHAP. VI.

*Containing an Account of an unexpected and uncommon Entertainment in the Way to Mexico.*

## CHAP. VII.

*Evil productive of Good, or the Devil makes a Saint.*

a

CHAP.

# The CONTENTS.

## CHAP. VIII.

*The Insolence of an Upstart——The Reward of modest Bravery, in the Story of Don Casa blanca.*

## CHAP. IX.

*A Design of assassinating Scipio, discovered and punished.*

## CHAP. X.

*The Death and last Will of the Bishop of Guaxaca.*

## CHAP. XI.

*Don Sancho falls ill; the Cause and Consequence of his Illness.*

## CHAP. XII.

*Muscada meets with Gil Blas at Madrid; By Mistake this Title was put in. \* which is in the Reader's Option to peruse or pass by.*

## CHAP. XIII.

*Continuation of Muscada's Narrative. The Right of Gil Blas to the Estate of Ximenes discovered.*

## CHAP. XIV.

*The Life of Don Bernardo.*

## CHAP. XV.

*A Continuation of the foregoing.*

## CHAP. XVI.

*Don Sancho rescues the Count de Leyva from imminent Danger.*

## CHAP. XVII.

*Don Alphonso arrives at Madrid.*

THE



THE  
L I F E  
OF  
Don ALPHONSO BLAS  
De L I R I A S.

---

CH A P. I.

*The Education of ALPHONSO; the  
Arrival of Scipio from America.*



MY Father having written his Adventures, renders a different Account of our Family (which I shall give in the Sequel) absolutely necessary; since the Publick, which received that Work with a Sort of Avidity, and yet mention it in Terms which speak their Approbation, must thence imagine, that

B

I

I am descended from Ancestors on the Male Side as obscure, as they are illustrious on that of the Female; my Mother being of a House, in which there never was any Mixture of *Moors* or *Jewish* Blood; an Honour not many among, even the first of our Nobility, can boast: and was besides allied to several of the most distinguished Families in *Spain*. I am the younger of two Sons which she bore to my Father. *Don Alphonso*, who was my Godfather, having no Children of his own, took me from my Parents at five Years of Age, charging himself with the Care of my Education, and future Settlement in the World.

Soon after the Disgrace of *Count Olivarez*, my Patron, having received the King's Thanks for his honourable Discharge of the high and important Trust of Vice-Roy of *Aragon*, with a Pension suitable to his Birth, and the Dignity of the exalted Post which he had many Years enjoyed, withdrew to his own Scite, where he lead a Life as retired as was possible for a Person of his Rank, universally esteemed and respected by the Nobility and Gentry of his Country. He spent, by much, the greater Part of his Time in his Library, or in conversing with his Lady, very fond of the Mathematics, his Chaplain, a Man of great Learning, remarkable Modesty and singular Piety, and a *German* Gentleman,

tleman, who was not only a thorough Philosopher, but an excellent Linguist, being beside the Dead, Master of all the *European Languages*. This Gentleman *Don Alphonso* had engaged to undertake the Care of my Education, and he conceived such a Fondness for me, that I was hardly ever out of his Arms; and as he never spoke to me but in *Latin*, before I was eight Years old, I was rather more perfect in that Language, than in the *Spanish*. My *Patron*, who continued his Protection and Benevolence to my Father, would sometimes with *Donia Scraphina*, and the two Gentlemen already mentioned, pass a Month or Six Weeks at *Lirias*, and always take me with them.

Thus careffed and indulged, as much as Prudence would allow, I arrived at my thirteenth Year, and was at that Age Master of the *Latin, High Dutch, French and Italian*. *Don Alphonso* then thought it Time to enter me in the University of *Salamanca*, whither he sent me under the Tuition of *Don Juan de Steinboek*, the *German*, under whose Care I had hitherto been educated, with two Servants in his Livery to attend us.

My Tutor, who had for me a paternal Affection, took all possible Pains, and an uncommon Care, not only to forward me in my Studies, but to tincture my Mind with just and honourable Principles; to include



all in few Words, to make me a good Christian. He never let me go any where without him, or suffered my receiving any Visits from young Gentlemen, whose Conversation he apprehended might debauch my Morals. As I really loved him, and he was of an engaging Temper, I found no Restraint in this Procedure; and was as well pleased in his Company, as I could have been in that of Persons of my own Age. He denied me no reasonable Amusements, and really made my Studies rather a Diversion than a Labour. What *Don Alphonso* allowed to maintain us, I can't say; but we kept three Horses: I had always a Purse of Gold in my Pocket, and paid, myself, for Books and other Necessaries wanting. When my Money was gone, *Don Juan* gave me a fresh Supply, without asking any Account from me, as indeed he was a Witness of my Expences; and I can't tax my self with the squandering one single *Real* in two Years, which was the Time we spent at *Salamanca*, before we paid a Visit to *Don Alphonso*, or my Parents.

As I took a Pleasure in my Studies, in which my humane Tutor was ever pleased to assist me, and to obviate what Difficulties might occur, I never broke in upon the Hours destined to my Improvement; my leisure Time I employed in learning to design,  
of

of which Amusement I was very fond, or in taking the Air with my Tutor and *Don Joseph de la Zerda*, accompanied by the Gentleman who had Care of him, and was very cautious of his making Acquaintance with any Persons but of unblemished Character.

This young Nobleman, great Nephew to the Duke of *Medina Celi*, and I contracted a strick Friendship; we were seldom asunder, at Times allowed for our Recreation, and our Tutors, both Men of Probity and profound Erudition, were altogether as intimate as were their Pupils. We often made little Parties of Pleasure, and not seldom eat together, either in *Don Joseph's* or my Apartment. At Length *Don Juan* and I were recalled by *Don Alphonso*, who, from the Account my Preceptor had given him of my Progress in my Studies, thought it Time for me to make the Tour of *Europe*, and study the great and crabbed Volume of the World.

We took our Leave of *Don Joseph* and his Tutor; and that young Nobleman did me the Honour to promise me his Friendship and Interest, if at any Time he might be of Service in my Affairs. When we arrived at *Leyva*, we were agreeably surprized to find there all the Family of *Lirias* and *Jutella*, invited to pass the Easter holy Days by *Don Alphonso* and *Donia Seraphina* at their Scite. {

I shall omit the Reception we met with, which was such as might be expected from a generous Patron thoroughly satisfied with my Conduct, and tender Parents of a Son, whom they had not seen for the Space of two Years, and who had never given them the least Ground for Displeasure.

The first Salutations being past, I enquired after my Brother, and was told, that he was gone a Fishing, and, when out upon Country Sports, he never returned till Night. My Uncle *Don Juan de Futella* said, he was an excellent and keen Sportsman, and though he was but fifteen Months older than me, there was not in the *Spanish* Dominions a Man who knew a Horse or Dog better; was more indefatigable, or killed more Game; being equally good at *Scale, Feather or Leather*: and he had rather hear him at the Tail of a Pack of Hounds, as he was a Proficient in Dog-Language, than the finest Concert of Music. In the Season for angling he made all Sorts of artificial Flies, and knew the proper Bait for every Species of Fish; and in Partridge Season, he never hunted a Dog but of his own making, or drew a Net he had not himself knit. In a Word, there was not a more complete Country Gentleman, and, I hope, continued *Don Juan de Futella*, he will never see a Court, since the Country affords the only Happiness that can be expected  
on

on this Side the Grave; which I think is demonstrable from the Examples of such as have long pursued this universal Object of all Mortals, in the midst of a Hurry of Business; in the Pomp and Grandeur of Royal Palaces; and finding their Pursuit vain, have wisely sought and found it in the innocent Amusements of a Country Life.

Indeed, replied my Father, you and his Mother have quite ruined the Boy; he might have made an excellent Scholar, have been of Service to his Country, and have given Lustre to his Family, which on my Side needs a great many Virtues to cover over the Meanness of our Original; but his Mother would not let him study for fear of impairing his Health, and your Indulgence to his Passion of Hunting and other Sports, encouraged him in his Idleness, riveted his Aversion to Learning, and have made him good for nothing but a Dog-Kennel or a Stable. Alas! said my Mother, he was always of too tender a Complexion for severe Studies; but of what Use would Learning be to him? Thank Heaven, *Don Alphonso's* Generosity, and what you have made in the Service of the State, are sufficient to satisfy the Ambition of any Man, who can be content with all the Conveniences of Life. My Manner of *Jutella*, said my Uncle, will be some little Addition, as I have no Children of my own. Madam, replied

my Father, do you remember you have another Son? I fancy not; for you have given all to *Sancho*; what has *Alphonso* done? Don't trouble yourself, said my God-father and Patron, you have given him to me; *Donia Dorothea* does me Justice in thinking her Care for *Alphonso* superfluous.

At these Words I made my Patron a very low Bow, and was going to return my most humble Thanks, when my Tutor prevented me, by saying; if a just and grateful Sense of his Goodness could engage a Continuance of it, he was sure his Pupil would always have a generous Patron in the exemplary *Don Alphonso*. *Donia Seraphina de Leyva* replied, she was satisfied, that *Alphonso*, being educated under the Care of *Don Juan de Steinbock*, her Lord would never have Cause to repent his Generosity, if she could term paying the Son Part of a Debt due to the Father, doing more than strict Justice.

Supper was by this Time ready, for it was near Evening when we arrived at *Leyva*; the good Chaplain came down, and very cordially welcomed us on our Return, making both my Tutor and me a very handsome short Compliment on his Care and my Conduct.

We were just sitting down to Table, when my Brother came in from his Sport; what my Father had said had given me an Idea of a meer Rustick. I was agreeably surprised

prised to find, instead of a downright Clown, for such had I painted him in my Imagination, a genteel well made Gentleman, easy and polite in his Behaviour ; of good Sense, and an engaging ready Wit, governed by a mannerly Prudence. He embraced me very affectionately, and complimented my Tutor in handsome Terms. While we were at Supper, I was very attentive both to his Discourse and Behaviour, and was not a little out of Countenance to see myself so greatly eclipsed. My Uncle had from his Childhood accustomed him to the Conversation of Men, and never made a Visit to any of the neighbouring Quality without him. He had learned his Exercises at *Jutella*, where my Uncle entertained a dancing and fencing Master, and took the Pains, himself, to teach him to ride the great Horse. No Gentleman in *Spain*, if any professed Master, better understood the *Manage*. *Don Juan* was very fond of History, which, every Evening, and on such Days as were not fit for their Sports, he made my Brother read to him, and minute down the most remarkable Events : on these they used to reason, and censure or applaud the Conduct of the great Men concerned ; by which Method my Brother had the History of most Nations treasured up in his Memory, and was an entertaining Companion, though no Scholar.

Brother, said he, I was quite charmed with the Character that worthy Gentleman, *Don Juan de Steinboek*, sent of you from *Salamanca*; not only as I had in View your future Welfare, but, as I knew it was a Pleasure to *Don Alphonso*, our Patron, to whom we owe the most dutiful Respect, to find you correspond with his Wishes, and sensible of the Honour of his Benevolence and Protection. I replied, that I very well knew the great Debt our Family owed that Nobleman, which was too large for any other Return than a dutiful Observance and grateful Acknowledgments.

*Alphonso*, said my Patron, did you ever see the Emblem of Liberality? I answered, my Lord, I have. Then you know, replied his Lordship, in making a Present, she turns her Head backwards, to shew that no Return is expected, and that a good Action is sufficiently repaid by the Pleasure it administers. Your Brother's and your Discourse is no way agreeable to me; and if you would really oblige me, let me hear no more on that Topic. He spoke this in a manner that imposed us Silence. *Sancho*, said he to my Brother, what Sport have you had? My Lord, replied he, I have brought in a fine Dish of Fish, which your Lordship will soon see upon the Table.

He had hardly made this Answer, when a Servant entering told *Don Alphonso*, that  
*Senior*



*Senior Scipio* from *America* begged the Honour to kiss his Lordship's Hands. At this Message a visible Joy appeared in the Countenances of all the Company; my Aunt, *Seraphina de Futella*, cried out, Heaven and the blessed Virgin be praised, 'tis my Father! They all rose from the Table, and *Don Alphonso* embracing *Senior Scipio*, whom the Servant was introducing, brought him forward. My Aunt immediately fell upon her Knees, and embraced his; every one, especially my Father, heartily congratulated his safe Return, after an Absence of twelve Years.

These Careffes being over, *Don Alphonso* placed him at Table next himself. He then asked him a number of Questions, as did almost all the rest of the Company. My Lord, said *Senior Scipio*, when your Leisure will permit you to listen to such trifling Amusements as are my Adventures, I will do myself the Honour to give you a particular Detail. I shall, now, only say, that I have sacrific'd my Life to my Love for my Daughter, and my Gratitude to my Patron, *Don Gil Blas de Santillane*, whom I rejoice to see the Father of two such promising Youths (we had been presented to him by my Aunt). *Don Juan de Futella* I have brought to *Old Spain* Money enough to purchase and re-annex to the Castle of *Futella* such Lands; as the Generosity and publick Spirit of your

Ancestors had severed. The Lordship of *Xagua*, which lies between *Jutella* and *Lirias*, and joins those Mannors, was purchased two Years since by *Senior Pedro Rondillas*, my Agent at *Madrid*, and the Title Deed is in your Name. I have left it with my Baggage and Servants at *Lirias*, where I alighted this Morning.

My Impatience to pay my Duty to *Don Alphonso*, the Lady *Seraphina*, and to see my Patron, my Daughter and your self, would not allow me to take above three Hours Rest, before I set forward with your Horses, *Don Gil Blas*, for *Leyva*. The Purchase I have mentioned cost me a hundred thousand Crowns, which I present you, *Don Juan*, to make some Compensation for the Want of Birth in my Daughter. I have yet two hundred thousand Crowns more in Specie, and a small Present, which I hope the Countess of *Leyva* will accept of, a Necklace of the finest Emeralds *America* can produce. I have a String of beautiful Pearl for *Donia Dorothea*, some curious feather Hangings for *Don Alphonso*, a cordial grateful Affection for my dear Patron, a pretty Estate near *Mexico* for his younger Son, something worth the Acceptance of his elder: Patents of Nobility, purchased by my Blood, and a deep Consumption (which was indeed visible) for myself.

This is a summary Account; at a more proper Season I will be as particular as you

you shall desire. I now only entreat that I may receive no Compliments on the Performance of my Duty, and have Liberty, without disturbing the Company, to retire to a Chamber, being much fatigued with my Journey.

*Don Alphonso* immediately ordered the Groom of the Chambers to prepare a Room for *Senior Scipio*, who would have suffered no one to stir from the Table; but my Father would, notwithstanding all he could allege, conduct him to his Chamber; where he soon left him to his Rest, and returned to the Company.

The Arrival of *Senior Scipio* in such Affluence, was a Subject of Joy to the Company, though it was greatly alloyed by his declining Condition; for it was evident he could not live long. As I was in great measure a Stranger to his Story, though I had often heard him mentioned by my Father and Aunt, and knew that he was in *America*; when the Company broke up, and retired to their respective Chambers, I desired my Brother, who went with me to mine, to tell me, if he knew them, the Particulars of his Life.

I would have you, said he, suspend your Curiosity till you come to *Lirias*, where I will shew you a Manuscript of my Father's writing of his own Life down to your Birth, which includes the Adventures of this *Senior Scipio*.

After

After some little Stay, he wished me a good Night, and went to his own Apartment.

---

## CHAP. II.

### *Ingratitude punish'd.*

THE next Morning I rose according to my Custom at College, by Break of Day; and being drest, went directly to *Don Alphonso's* Library, where I diverted myself till I heard the whole Family stirring. I then went into the Hall, and found there *Don Alphonso*, *Don Juan de Futella* and my Father. As they were earnest in Discourse, I only saluted them, and went into the great Court, where I found my Brother mounted on a stately *Turkish* Horse, exercising him with great Dexterity.

*Alphonso*, said he, will you get on Horseback, and take an Airing this Morning? I answer'd, that I would willingly accompany him, but that I had not yet paid my Duty to *Don Alphonso*; beside I thought it might be deemed a Slight of *Senier Scipio*, if we did not wait his coming down.

You judge rightly, replied he, 'tis what I did not think of; and therefore designed, if you would have excused me, to have breakfasted, and taken a Day's Angling.

gling with Don *Pedro de Patillos*, with whom I had made an Appointment : But, I will send a Servant to disengage myself, and join you in the great Parlour, where the Family Breakfasts every Morning, and 'tis now about the time.

Don *Pedro de Patillos* ? I think I have heard our Mother mention him as a Relation ? He is, said my Brother, second Cousin to *Donia Dorothea*; does us the Honour sometimes of a Visit at *Lirias*, and is so good as to do me that of his Protection, for such I ought to call what a Nobleman so greatly above me condescends to term Friendship. He return'd from his Travels, soon after you went to *Salamanca*, and brought with him a Lady whom he married at *Rome*. She is allowed, by all, to be the greatest Beauty now in the *Spanish* Dominions; her Fortune was sufficient for a Sovereign Prince, and her Merit would give a Lustre to a Throne; yet with all this, I may say, without Partiality, Don *Pedro* deserves her : for he is not only a fine Person, an accomplish'd Cavalier, a Nobleman of excellent Parts, improved by Study, Travel, and the politest Conversation; but the sweetest temper'd Gentleman, and the tenderest Husband.

I should be proud, said I, to be known to a Gentleman of his Character, and glad you would take the first favourable Opportunity to present me to him.

I wish

I wish you too well replied *Sancho* to neglect it ; for his Conversation will not only edify you, but his Interest be of Service to you, as he is the Son of the Duke *D'Offuna's* Sister, a Nobleman whose Virtues eclipse the greatness of his Birth and Splendor of his Titles.

'Tis saying little of this great Duke, to mention his being of the first Class of Grandees, when the whole World acknowledges him at the Head of the first Class of Men of Probity. He is a great Man by Descent, but a much greater by his Virtues ; no Merit can be imputed to him from the former, as our Birth no way depends upon our selves, but all the Glory of the latter is entirely his own ; he owes it to neither his Ancestors nor Court favour. He lives up to the Dignity of his Birth ; but scorns to have a Tradesman contribute to the Grandeur of his Figure. He pays his Debts as religiously as a Merchant, who depends on his Credit, punctually pays his Bills of Exchange.

To give you his Character, in a few Words, he has as many Friends, as there are Persons who know him, and if he has an Enemy, which I do not believe, he must be of such a Character, as every honest Man would be ashamed of his Friendship. Don *Pedro* did me the Honour to take me with him to this Duke's Country Scite. I continued there six Weeks, where I observed a magnificent Hospitality,

Hospitality, and prudent Œconomy go Hand in Hand; true Greatness blended with an unaffected Humanity; State and Affability united; and extensive Charity without the least Tincture of Ostentation.

His Son is, in the Phrase of his Flaterers, Gay, Generous, Brave, and a most entertaining Companion; but the disinterested part of the World, stripping him of these Virtues, borrowed to Cloak his Vices; speak him Leud, Extravagant, Quarrellsome, and drowned in Debauchery: That he seemed to Travel not to improve, but to corrupt his Mind; not to gain a Knowledge of the World; of the different Interests of States; but to Treasure up, and bring back with him all the Vices peculiar to every respective Country he visited. That he has the Arrogance of a *Venetian*; the Revenge of a *Roman*; the Foppery of a *Frenchman*; the Drunkenness of a *German*; and the Self-sufficiency of an *Englishman*.

It is not from any Propensity to Detraction that I give you this, I fear, too just Character of the young Nobleman; but from my having heard that Don *Alphonso* designs to send you to Court, and as I believe among others, you will be recommended to the Protection of the Duke his Father, I thought it necessary you should be acquainted with what the World says of both.

At



At this Instant a Servant let us know that the Lady *Seraphina* was gone into the Parlour: upon which Notice my Brother gave his Horse to a Groom, and we join'd the Company, who were sitting down to take their Chocolate, then nothing near so common as it has since been, and was seen in the Houses of the Quality only. Senior *Scipio* enquired after most of the Neighbouring Families, and among others, after that of the Count of *Fuente Buena*. Don *Alphonso* told him the good Nobleman was well ; but had left the Kingdom of *Valencia*, and lived at a fine Estate in that of *Murcia*, where he had a very noble Scite, which, on the one side yielded a Prospect of the *Mediterranean* Sea ; and on the other, entertain'd the Eye with a fine Landſcape of intermingled Woods, Pastures, Arable Grounds, Plains, Hills and Rivulets. His Castle and Estates in this Country he has given to Don *Pedro de Patillos* his Son, who was about thirteen Years of Age when you went to *America*. He is an accomplish'd Cavalier, and married to a *Roman* Lady of Quality of uncommon Beauty, singular Merit, and a prodigious Fortune, not less worth than threeſcore thousand Crowns a Year. My Friend *Sancho* here can give you her History, which I am of Opinion will entertain you. He is a great Favourite of that Lady, by having had the good Fortune to make himſelf agreeable  
to

to Don *Pedro*, from whom he learned all the Particulars, and who is a thorough Sportsman. As I was pleased with the Story, I have made him write it down, and that he might imitate your Novelists, he obtained of the Lady, to whom he shewed his Work, which she received with a Complaisance and good Nature, that adds a Charm to all her Actions, a Copy of the only two Letters which passed between her and Don *Pedro*, when he made her his Addressee. He copied them in the *Italian*, but the Reverend Don *Geronimo*, our Curate, has rendered them in *Spanish*. *Sancho*, you will, I believe oblige Senior *Scipio*, and some others of the Company in reading your Work. I'll assure you my young Friend is no contemptible Biographer. Senior *Scipio* saying he would do him a Pleasure, my Brother went to his Chamber, and immediately returned with some Sheets of written Paper in his Hand. While our Author, said Don *Alphonso*, entertains you, Strangers to his History, we who have heard it, will take a turn in the Grove. *Donia Seraphina de Jutella* answered the Countess of *Leyva*, and I, will withdraw to our Toilets.

There being none left with my Brother but Senior *Scipio*, my Tutor and self, he opened his Manuscript and making a short Apology for the Incorrectness of his Style, read as follows.

‘ The

‘ The Count *D’ Albano* and the Marquis  
‘ *Castruccio* were two young Noblemen of il-  
‘ lustrious Houses; the former the Inheritor  
‘ of a great Estate; the latter, by the Ex-  
‘ travagance of a Father, whose Passion for  
‘ Play had ruined his Patrimony, having  
‘ nothing left to support the Dignity of his  
‘ Descent, was brought up by his Aunt, the  
‘ Countess of *Spizza*; whose Estate being  
‘ but barely sufficient to keep up her Port,  
‘ retired from *Rome*, and lived privately at  
‘ her Country Scite, that she might spare the  
‘ more for her Nephew’s Education.

‘ When he was fit for the University, she  
‘ sent him to finish his Studies at *Padua*, de-  
‘ signing to procure him a Post becoming his  
‘ Birth in the *Venetian* Army; the *Doge* of  
‘ which Republic was related to the Family  
‘ of *Castruccio*, as was also the *Procurator* of  
‘ *Saint Mark*. Here the Marquis became  
‘ acquainted with the aforementioned Count.  
‘ As they were about the same Age, both  
‘ nobly descended, and pretty much of a  
‘ Temper, they soon contracted a Friendship,  
‘ which gathered strength by time; their  
‘ Affection for each other seeming daily to  
‘ encrease. They were, while the Marquis had  
‘ Money, very seldom a sunder: Though as  
‘ the Allowance which he received from his  
‘ Aunt was not sufficient to supply the Ex-  
‘ pence the Count’s many Parties of Plea-  
‘ sure

‘ sure lead him into, he would sometimes  
‘ make Excuses to absent himself.

‘ The Count, at first, taxed him with want  
‘ of Friendship, but at length, thinking his  
‘ Affection slighted, seldom invited him to  
‘ share in his Diversions.

‘ This was sensibly felt by the Marquis,  
‘ whose Pride, however, was too great to give  
‘ his Friend the true Reason of his declining  
‘ to partake in his Parties of Pleasure. The  
‘ Count, who really loved him, and was never  
‘ thoroughly easy in his Absence, was by Ac-  
‘ cident undeceived, and satisfied that the re-  
‘ servedness of the Marquis, was not owing to  
‘ his want of Friendship, but, in Fact, to his  
‘ want of Money. This was a new Trouble  
‘ to him ; for he knew he had a Soul above  
‘ being obliged at the Expence of a Stranger,  
‘ and scorned to share those Diversions, for  
‘ which he did not pay his share of the Charge.

‘ He was as willing, as able, to furnish  
‘ him with what Money was necessary to his  
‘ making a Figure ; and would have thought  
‘ no Sum too great to Purchase the Company  
‘ of his dear *Castruccio*; but how to do it, with-  
‘ out his Knowledge, was the difficulty. At  
‘ length he thought of the following Expe-  
‘ dient. He took a Post Chaise and drove  
‘ directly to *Venice*, which is but twenty four  
‘ Miles distant from *Padua*, and ordered  
‘ the Banker, who paid him by Direc-

‘ tion

‘ tion of his Guardians, \*5000 Ducats yearly  
 ‘ for his support, to remit 2000 of them by  
 ‘ Quarterly Payments to the Marquis *Castruc-*  
 ‘ *cio*; who, having 1000 from his Aunt,  
 ‘ was thus upon a Level with the Count.

‘ The Banker being equally punctual and  
 ‘ secret in complying with these Orders, and  
 ‘ the Count retrenching his Expences, the  
 ‘ Marquis and he became inseparable Com-  
 ‘ panions: though the former was surprized  
 ‘ at this Augmentation of what he used to  
 ‘ receive, yet he never could discover from  
 ‘ what Source it flowed. He knew it could  
 ‘ not come from his Aunt, who streightened  
 ‘ her self very much to spare him one Thou-  
 ‘ sand: The *Doge*, though his Relation, as  
 ‘ he had many Children, and was but newly  
 ‘ invested with that high Dignity, which  
 ‘ far from being an Advantage, is for some  
 ‘ Years an Expence; he could not suppose  
 ‘ the Author of this good Fortune; and the  
 ‘ *Procurator* of Saint *Mark*, he knew too  
 ‘ covetous to be suspected of such Bounty.

‘ He endeavored by the Banker at *Padua*,  
 ‘ who paid him, to discover his Benefactor;  
 ‘ but he gave him no other Answer, than his  
 ‘ being ordered to pay the Marquis *Castruc-*  
 ‘ *cio* such Sums as were remitted to him from  
 ‘ his Correspondent at *Rome*; and which he  
 ‘ brought him every Quarter.

‘ Three

' There was now a perfect Harmony be-  
 ' tween the two Friends, and the Marquis no  
 ' longer under the Necessity of inventing  
 ' new Evasions. They continued three Years  
 ' at the University in a remarkable Intima-  
 ' cy; at the End of which Time the Count  
 ' was to begin his Travels. His Guardians  
 ' having sent him a Letter of Credit, for  
 ' what Money he thought proper to take of  
 ' his Banker at *Venice*, required him to Visit  
 ' *Milan, Turin, Genoa*, and return through  
 ' *Florence to Rome*; from whence they pro-  
 ' posed to him to take a Tour to *Naples* be-  
 ' fore he left *Italy*. The Count, on receipt  
 ' of his Letters, went to his Friend, and  
 ' having given them to him to peruse, said,  
 ' Fortune, my dear Marquis, is not always  
 ' just to Merit; if she was, you might give  
 ' me those Demonstrations of Friendship  
 ' I now come to offer you. I am, you per-  
 ' ceive, speedily to quit *Padua*; but cannot  
 ' think of being parted from my dear Ca-  
 ' struccio. I am no Stranger to your Circum-  
 ' stances, and you must have heard that my  
 ' Fortune is considerable. It is sufficient, my  
 ' Friend, for both, and if you have that Af-  
 ' fection for me you have often professed,  
 ' you will allow me to make it common to  
 ' both. To prove that I offer you this with  
 ' a sincere Pleasure and a cordial Affection,  
 ' I shall now acquaint you with a Secret,  
 ' which

‘ which your Industry has not been able to  
‘ penetrate ; and which I should yet conceal,  
‘ were it not to convince you that what I  
‘ at present offer is no Compliment, having  
‘ these three Years divided my Allowance  
‘ with you. What return my dear Count  
‘ can I make, replied the Marquis, to such  
‘ Excess of Goodness ! I ask, said he, no  
‘ other return than a continuance of your  
‘ Friendship, which my Affection has a just  
‘ claim to, and which I value far beyond a  
‘ Fortune. My dear Count, replied the  
‘ other, do me Justice and believe I have  
‘ the same Sentiments ; that our Separation  
‘ would be equally insupportable to me :  
‘ though narrow minded Men may interpret  
‘ my readiness to accompany you in your  
‘ Travels, as proceeding rather from a greedy  
‘ Eye fixed on your affluent Fortune, and  
‘ from a regard to my own Interest, than  
‘ from the just Esteem I have of your Merit,  
‘ and a gratefull Sense of your unparalled  
‘ Generosity. Marquis, answered *Albano*, the  
‘ Man conscious of an upright Heart, gives  
‘ himself little Pain about the Opinion of  
‘ the World, which will censure the most  
‘ Virtuous : It was ever so my dear Friend,  
‘ and as it is not in our Power to redress the  
‘ Evil, we must bear with it. In a Word,  
‘ they left the University together, the Mar-  
‘ quis having first acquainted the Countess of  
‘ *Pizza*

' *Pizza* with the generous Friendship of the  
 ' Count, who, in a Letter to the same Lady,  
 ' confirmed what her Nephew had written;  
 ' and let her know, that a farther Remittance  
 ' to him was unnecessary, as the Marquis  
 ' should share his Income. At *Venice* they  
 ' lodged at the Banker's House, 'till the Ar-  
 ' rival of a Gentleman who was there to meet  
 ' and accompany the Count in the Tour of  
 ' *Europe*.

' Every Thing requisite being in Readiness,  
 ' they took the prescribed Route, and  
 ' went to *Rome*, where the Count's Guardians  
 ' settled the Expences of his Travels at  
 ' twenty Thousand Crowns a Year. I shall  
 ' pass over the Particulars of their Tour, in  
 ' which, if it was possible, their Bands of  
 ' Friendship were more firmly knit.

' They returned to *Rome*, and continued  
 ' the same cordial Affection; they shared all  
 ' Events; no Misfortune could befall the one,  
 ' which did not affect the other; and the  
 ' one knew no Pleasure without the Participation  
 ' of his Friend.

' In this uninterrupted Harmony they  
 ' passed the Days of their Youth.

' When they were pretty near fifty, the  
 ' Marquis pressed the Count to marry, offering  
 ' to make a large Settlement on the  
 ' Lady he should chuse, and the Children he  
 ' might have. On his shewing an Inclination



‘ tion to live single, the Count gave Way to  
‘ the Solicitations of his Friends, and married a Lady of Family, who bore him  
‘ one Daughter, and died before her Month  
‘ was up, to the inexpressible Grief of the  
‘ Count and his Friend.

‘ The Child, who was christened *Maria*,  
‘ and now makes Don *Pedro* happy in a most  
‘ excellent Wife, was brought up with all  
‘ possible Care and Tenderness, and seemed  
‘ to have two Fathers, the Count and the  
‘ Marquis; but at the Age of ten Years she  
‘ was deprived of the former. He fell dangerously ill, and his Recovery was in few  
‘ Days despaired of by his Physicians. Being  
‘ sensible that he was summoned to pay the  
‘ common Debt of Nature, he ordered his  
‘ Daughter, the young *Donia Maria* to be  
‘ brought to his Bed-side, from which the  
‘ Marquis had never stirred from the first Day  
‘ of his Friend’s Sicknefs, but, Day and  
‘ Night, sat by him in a great Chair, and gave  
‘ all the Signs of an inconsolable Grief.

‘ The Count raising himself in his Bed,  
‘ said, my dear *Castruccio*, for my Sake take  
‘ Care of your Health, that this Innocent,  
‘ who, your self excepted, is all I hold dear,  
‘ may in you find the Loss of her Father repaired; take her, my Friend, into your  
‘ Protection, I consign her to your friendly  
‘ Care; to her transfer that Affection and  
Friendship

‘ Friendship which her Father has long experienced ; I shall only desire you to remember that she is mine, the Daughter of your Friend *Albano* ; This, I am certain, is sufficient to engage all your Care and Tenderneſs. He then gave his Daughter into the Arms of the Marquis, whoſe Tears flowed too abundantly to allow his making any Answer.

‘ The Count calling to him his Valet de Chambre, and giving him the Keys of a Cabinet, ſaid, bring me the uppermoſt of the ſmall Drawers. Out of this he took a Pacquet ſealed up, and deſiring the Curate of his Pariſh, who was then in the Room, and had ſtayed at his Requeſt, after having performed for him the laſt Offices of the Church, to come near, ſaid, This is my laſt Will, by which I have divided my Eſtate between my Friend the Marquis and my Daughter, whom I leave to his Care to marry her according to her Rank, and his Diſcretion; to him I transfer the Duty ſhe owes me, and I will, in caſe ſhe diſobeys him, and marries without his Approbation, that ſhe forfeit her Moiety of my Eſtate, and the Marquis ſhall enjoy the whole.

‘ In caſe of the Death of either, without Iſſue, I will, that the Survivor ſhall ſucceed to the Moiety of the Deceſſed ; and in caſe

‘ Heaven should inspire my Daughter to chuse  
 ‘ a religious Life, the Marquis shall succeed  
 ‘ to my whole Estate, paying such a Portion  
 ‘ to the Monastery to which she shall retire,  
 ‘ as becomes her Quality.

‘ I thought it proper by Word of Mouth,  
 ‘ to declare the Sum of my last Will with  
 ‘ Regard to the Bulk of my Fortune, that the  
 ‘ Evidence of a Person of your Probity may  
 ‘ prevent all Cavils: notwithstanding I have  
 ‘ taken all possible Care to have the Forms  
 ‘ of Law observed, and to have my Will  
 ‘ witnessed by Men of Character.

‘ He gave the Will to the Marquis; then  
 ‘ turning to the little *Maria*, spoke to her  
 ‘ in Terms suitable to the Tenderness of her  
 ‘ Years, admonishing her to obey the Mar-  
 ‘ quis as a Father, to follow his Advice,  
 ‘ and to depend entirely on his Judgment,  
 ‘ who was more capable of concluding what  
 ‘ was for her Interest or Honour, than she  
 ‘ could be, were she even of adult Years;  
 ‘ he then embracing the little Innocent, who  
 ‘ was drowned in Tears, however ignorant  
 ‘ of the great Loss which she was very soon  
 ‘ to suffer, ordered her Woman to take her  
 ‘ to her own Appartment; the Child being  
 ‘ removed, whom her Woman carried away  
 ‘ screaming, My dear Papa, my dear Papa!  
 ‘ *Adano* in a languid Voice address’d him-  
 ‘ self to his Friend in these Words: This  
 ‘ is

' is the first Time, my dear *Castruccio*, that  
 ' I have preferred my own to your Satis-  
 ' faction, or could see you grieve, without  
 ' being sensibly afflicted ; but I own to you,  
 ' that I am now become so indulgent to  
 ' myself, that I rejoice the Nearness of my  
 ' Dissolution prevents the Agonies, worse to  
 ' me than Death, which I must have suffered  
 ' had I been so wretched, as to have seen you  
 ' in the languid Condition I now am. Par-  
 ' don this Partiality, the only one I have  
 ' been guilty of since our first Intimacy ;  
 ' and the rather, as it proceeds from the  
 ' most tender Friendship. I cease to live,  
 ' but——Here his Voice failed him, and  
 ' he closed his Eyes, which must exclude the  
 ' Light, 'till the last Trump shall awaken the  
 ' Inhabitants of the Grave from the Sleep of  
 ' Death.'

' The Grief of the Marquis for his loving  
 ' and beloved Friend, could not be moderated  
 ' by the vast Possessions he inherited on his  
 ' Death ; which indeed were no more than  
 ' what he enjoyed during his Life : For  
 ' though the Count had alone the Title, yet  
 ' the Disposal of his large Estate, was in com-  
 ' mon to both.

' Never Friendship was more sincere than  
 ' *Albano's*, or seem'd more affectionate and  
 ' grateful, than that of *Castruccio*.

‘ He called the Steward of the House,  
 ‘ when the first Sallies of his Grief would al-  
 ‘ low him the Use of Reason, and ordered  
 ‘ him to take the Care of the Family, and his  
 ‘ late Lord’s Funeral upon himself; com-  
 ‘ manding him to spare no Expence, that the  
 ‘ Pomp might be answerable to the Dignity of  
 ‘ the Count’s Birth, and the Affection he bore  
 ‘ his Memory. Having discharged this his  
 ‘ last Office to the Remains of his Friend,  
 ‘ he retired to his own Apartment, where  
 ‘ shutting himself up, he wou’d admit no  
 ‘ Visits, and receive no other Sustenance than  
 ‘ what was barely necessary to support Life; to  
 ‘ which he would willingly have put an end,  
 ‘ by abstaining from Food, did not Religion  
 ‘ and his Care for *Donia Maria* the beautiful  
 ‘ Image of his dear Friend, forbid his seeking  
 ‘ this Refuge from inconsolable Grief.

‘ While *Castruccio* was thus indulging his  
 ‘ melancholly Reflections on his lost Friend,  
 ‘ the Steward punctually obeyed his Com-  
 ‘ mands; and his late dear Master, whom  
 ‘ he had served thirty Years, being embalm’d,  
 ‘ he order’d the Corps to lie fifteen Days  
 ‘ in State; after which, inviting all the No-  
 ‘ bility of *Rome*, then in Town, the Domi-  
 ‘ nicans, and all the Mendicant Orders, he  
 ‘ had him transported in an Open Chariot,  
 ‘ drawn by eight Horses, preceded by He-  
 ‘ ralds, who carry’d the Count’s Ensigns, and  
 ‘ Choiristers

‘ Choiristers singing an Anthem to St *John’s*  
 ‘ Church, followed by a prodigious Train of  
 ‘ Coaches, illuminated with two Thousand  
 ‘ Wax Torches.

‘ The Corps was placed in the midst of  
 ‘ the Choir, where it remain’d encompass’d  
 ‘ with Wax Lights, and Masses said Day and  
 ‘ Night for the Soul of the Deceas’d, the  
 ‘ Space of a Month, in which Time a magni-  
 ‘ ficent Marble Tomb was finished at *Albano*,  
 ‘ where his Remains were deposited with the  
 ‘ greatest Pomp, and Masses said, for the  
 ‘ Space of a Year, by the Steward’s Order,  
 ‘ both there, in the Church of the Parish  
 ‘ at *Rome* where he died, and in the Church  
 ‘ of every Parish through which the Corps  
 ‘ had pass’d.

‘ Time, which moderates the most affect-  
 ‘ ing Grief, somewhat alleviated *Castruccio’s*,  
 ‘ who at the End of two Months appeared in  
 ‘ publick ; and calling together the Rela-  
 ‘ tions of his deceas’d Friend, the Curate and  
 ‘ Witnesses to his Will, had it open’d and  
 ‘ read to them. After which, he order’d  
 ‘ *Albano’s* Banker to pay such Legacies as  
 ‘ the Count had bequeathed to his Kindred,  
 ‘ Acquaintance and Servants ; all which, to-  
 ‘ gether with the Expences of his Funeral,  
 ‘ amounted to no more than thirty thousand  
 ‘ Crowns, nothing near half the Sum in  
 ‘ his Banker’s Hands.

‘ Having settled all Affairs at *Rome*, he  
 ‘ left the young *Donia Maria* under the Care  
 ‘ of a Lady of Quality, and great Merit,  
 ‘ with Attendants answerable to her Birth  
 ‘ and Fortune; and discharging all the Ser-  
 ‘ vants of the late Count, with a Valet de  
 ‘ Chambre and two Lackeys only, he went  
 ‘ to visit and take Possession of the noble  
 ‘ Estate left him.

‘ The Homage of the Tenants, the  
 ‘ Change of Place, the Sight of the Lord-  
 ‘ ships, his Reflection that he was absolute  
 ‘ Master of one half of these large Posses-  
 ‘ sions, and his calling to mind the irre-  
 ‘ vocable Decree of Death pass’d on the  
 ‘ whole Race of Man, by degrees dispatched  
 ‘ his Grief; and at Length, the very Obliga-  
 ‘ tion he had to his Friend, effaced the  
 ‘ Memory of the Count *D’ Albano*.

‘ Every Thing under the Sun is liable to  
 ‘ change, and perhaps, in the whole Crea-  
 ‘ tion, nothing is more mutable than Man.  
 ‘ One Season or one Day differs not so much  
 ‘ from another, as Man from himself. Every  
 ‘ Stage of Life makes an insensible Change  
 ‘ in our Bodies, and there is so near a Rela-  
 ‘ tion between them and our Souls, that the  
 ‘ Former influence and alter, according to our  
 ‘ Ages, the Views, Resolutions and Propen-  
 ‘ sity of the latter. To this we may add  
 ‘ that our Senses or Passions have such an  
 ‘ Ascen-

‘ Ascendant over our Reason, when we are  
‘ the least remiss in curbing them, that we  
‘ can, without a Blush, sometimes be guilty  
‘ of Actions, the Thoughts alone of which  
‘ wou’d at another strike us with Horror.

‘ The Change of Fortune very often makes  
‘ a Change of the whole Man; and he who  
‘ in Penury bounds his Ambition with the  
‘ Necessaries of Life; if he unexpectedly  
‘ becomes Master of an affluent Fortune,  
‘ extends his Views in Proportion.

‘ These Observations were verified in  
‘ the Marquis; who when he could call  
‘ nothing his own, coveted nothing; but  
‘ when he was absolute Lord of one half of  
‘ a great Estate, began to repine that it was  
‘ but half, and to contrive the Means to  
‘ possess the Whole.

‘ When he order’d the Will of his Friend  
‘ to be open’d and read in the Presence of the  
‘ Persons concern’d, he declared, that he  
‘ would take as much Care of *Donia Maria*,  
‘ as of the Apple of his Eye; and that his  
‘ Affection and Tenderness should con-  
‘ vince her and the World, while he liv’d,  
‘ that she had still a Father, who would, as  
‘ in Justice and Gratitude he was obliged,  
‘ prefer her Interest and Happiness to his  
‘ own: That his dear Friend had indeed  
‘ made him Master of one Half of his Estate,  
‘ but he should never esteem himself other



' than a Steward of the Whole, which at his  
 ' Death, should entirely, and he hoped  
 ' improved, revert to (the right Heir of Count  
 ' *Albano*) his beloved Pupil. But how vain are  
 ' the Designs of Men! How little do we  
 ' know our Strength, and how different are  
 ' our Actions from what we once really pro-  
 ' posed!

' Time having obliterated the Memory  
 ' of his Friend, the Marquis turn'd his  
 ' Eyes upon himself; and upon the greatness  
 ' of his Birth.

' Being possess'd of sufficient to support  
 ' his Dignity, and designing to deprive the  
 ' Daughter of his Benefactor of her Moiety  
 ' he thought of perpetuating his Name, by  
 ' marrying some Lady of Quality, who  
 ' might bring him Children.

' Having this Design, he address'd him-  
 ' self to an old Lady, his Relation,  
 ' and imparted to her his Resolution of  
 ' marrying. If he could meet with a Wo-  
 ' man of Family, virtuous, young, agree-  
 ' able in Temper and Person, and like-  
 ' ly to give him Issue, he did not much re-  
 ' gard her Fortune.

' *Donia Margarita*, for so was the Lady  
 ' named, told him that a Relation of her  
 ' late Husband's was then in her House,  
 ' who answered in every Point what he  
 ' sought. That she was a Widow, of about  
 ' Twenty-

' Twenty-four, descended from an illustrious House, had a Son of about six Years of Age; liv'd a Wife but two Years, was a prudent Lady, beautiful without seeming to know it; gay without Levity; complaisant without Flattery; convers'd with the greatest, without being wanting in what was due to her own Character; was obliging to the meanest, without making herself cheap: and of an even and engaging Temper; by the Prudence of her Oeconomy made a handsome Figure with a small Jointure, and her Virtue was such, as the Breath of Calumny could not sully her Character, or lay the least Indiscretion to her Charge.

' Charm'd with this Account, the Marquis asked the Lady's Name and Circumstances. She is, answer'd *Donia Margarita*, the Countess *Spineda*; her Father was the Marquis *del Campo*, whom you knew, and whose Estate is about twenty Miles distant from Rome, on the Way to *Civita Vecchia*. I may say, it lies equally distant from this City and that Sea Port, and is now in the Possession of his Son, Brother to the Lady in Question. The Count, her Husband, was a *Veronese*, and her Jointure is two Thousand Crowns a Year. When she comes to Town, she does me the Honour to reside in my Family.

' The Marquis desired her to procure him  
 ' an Interview with this Lady; which she  
 ' readily undertook to do, and propos'd his  
 ' being again at her House the next Day.  
 ' In short he saw and was enamour'd with  
 ' the Widow, and she, by the Knowledge  
 ' of his large Possessions, and his Promise  
 ' to marry his Pupil to her Son, when of a  
 ' fit Age, was, without much Difficulty in-  
 ' duced to shut her Eyes to the Disparity of  
 ' Years, and their Marriage was publickly  
 ' solemniz'd in as short a Time after he had  
 ' made his first Addressee as Decorum and  
 ' the necessary Preparations would permit.

' Soon after the Marquis had settled his  
 ' Family, he took home to his Palace  
 ' *Donia Maria*, the young Countess of *Alba-*  
 ' *no*. She was greatly caress'd by both the  
 ' Marquis and his Lady, who looking upon  
 ' her as a future Daughter in Law, was ex-  
 ' tremely tender over her Person and careful  
 ' of her Education.

' Eighteen Months after his Marriage the  
 ' Marquis having a Son born, began to me-  
 ' ditate the Means of effecting what he had  
 ' long design'd; viz. the getting Possession  
 ' of the whole Estate of his deceas'd Friend,  
 ' and repaying the greatest Generosity with  
 ' the blackest and most ungrateful Infidelity,  
 ' by robbing the helpless Orphan, who was  
 ' entrusted to his Care.

' To

' To perpetrate this Crime, he endeavour'd, gradually to wear his Lady's Affections from her Son the young *Spineda*, in which, by her fondness for her new born Infant, he easily succeeded, and her being deliver'd of a second Son, by the Marquis, engross'd so much of her Tenders for these young Branches, that she became quite indifferent to the Fruit of her first Marriage, and thinking no more of advancing the Fortune of young *Spineda* by the Match, which was one of the Motives of her marrying the Marquis, she became his Accomplice, in endeavouring to build the Fortunes of her younger Children on the Ruin of the young Countess *d' Albano*.

• To this End two Artifices were set on Foot. *Donia Maria*, now about fourteen Years of Age, was at first debar'd from the innocent Amusements she had been allow'd; by degrees deny'd all Company, and treated with great Asperity on the one Hand, by the Marchioness, and environ'd on the other, with People, set on by the Marquis, who under the Veil of Compassion, and Mask of Piety daily suggested to her that a Convent only could shelter her from the Severity of which she complain'd, and by extolling the Happiness attending on a Religious Life, which freed

• from all the Cares Anxieties and Accidents  
 • of the World, wasted it's happy and wise  
 • Embracers, through a pacific Sea, that no  
 • Storms could ruffle, to those glorious  
 • Mansions of uninterrupted and endless  
 • Joys, prepared for those whose Courage  
 • had resisted the vain Allurements of the  
 • false Pleasures of this transitory Life; and  
 • whose Prudence had preferred an eternal  
 • to a temporary Good.

• These pious Comforters, at the same  
 • Time bewailed the Folly of poor thought-  
 • less Mortals, who could fix their Hearts  
 • on Riches, which, they were not sure they  
 • had an Hour to enjoy, and risk the  
 • Loss of Treasures of which they could never  
 • be depriv'd.

• *Donia Maria* did by no Means relish the  
 • Advice given her, by these pretended  
 • Friends, and young as she was, she could  
 • discover the Design. As the Marquis  
 • found this Artifice fail; that the pious  
 • Discourses of his Instruments made no Im-  
 • pressions on his Pupil; that she cou'd not  
 • be cajoled into a Monastery, and that her  
 • Relations had proposed several Noble  
 • Matches, which he eluded by various Ex-  
 • cuses, sometimes alledging her Youth,  
 • sometimes her personal Defects; and at  
 • others, her religious and insuperable Re-  
 • solution to enter into Religion, he thought  
 • it

' it necessary, for the Marchioness to encrease  
' her Severity ; to try if Despair might not  
' effect what had vainly been attempted  
' by Suggestions and Admonitions. She was  
' deprived of her Jewels, no longer suf-  
' fered to visit her Relations, which had  
' hitherto been allow'd her in Company  
' with the Marchioness, and permitted to  
' go to Church, only, in the Marquis's Coach,  
' attended by an old Woman, who was a  
' vigilant Guard and suffered none to ap-  
' proach her.

' Don Pedro de Patillos, then at Rome  
' with his Uncle the Duke D' Ossuna, Am-  
' bassador from Spain, had often seen her  
' at her Devotions, and remarked the Vigi-  
' lance of her *Argos*. As he was deeply in-  
' Love with the Countess, he watched for an  
' Opportunity to slip a Billet into her Hand,  
' which might acquaint her with his Passion ;  
' but finding it vain, he employed two of the  
' Duke D' Ossuna's Servants, whom he could  
' entrust, to execute the following Project.  
' They were to watch the coming of the Mar-  
' quis's Coach to Church, and while the  
' Countess and her Guardian were at their De-  
' votions, to take out the *Linch-pin* of one of  
' the hind Wheels ; afterwards, when the  
' Coach was returning home, one of them  
' without his Livery, on the Side where the  
' old Woman sat, was to call to the Coach-  
' man,

man, and advertise him of the Danger,  
 and the others on the Side of the Countess,  
 to watch an Opportunity, in the Duke's Li-  
 very that she might know him again, to slip  
 the following Letter into her Hand.

To the Countess D' ALBANO.

MADAM.

I Have often had the Honour to see you at  
 Church, which 'tis impossible to do with-  
 out acknowledging the irresistible Power of your  
 Charm. I owe that Power; which has made  
 my Happiness entirely dependent on the beauti-  
 ful Countess D' Albano, for whom I have a  
 Passion equal to those Graces which gave  
 Birth, and would be unworthy of your Merit,  
 could it admit Definition to give you a just Idea  
 of its Tenderness, of which my Assiduity and in-  
 variable Attachment may, in some Measure,  
 make you sensible; none being,

MADAM,

More, &c.

DON PEDRO de PATILLOS.

The

' The Servants executed their Commission  
 ' with great Success, while the old Woman,  
 ' alarmed at the stopping of the Coach, ap-  
 ' prehensive of some Design upon her Charge,  
 ' looked out on one Side, and asked the  
 ' Reason; the Servant, in Livery, on the other,  
 ' gave the Letter to *Donia Maria*, who re-  
 ' ceived and put it in her Bosom; taking  
 ' particular Notice of the Livery, which  
 ' she knew belonged to the *Spanish Ambassa-*  
 ' *dor*.

' The Coachman got a new Pin, secured  
 ' the Wheel, and they returned home, with-  
 ' out the old Woman's having the least Sus-  
 ' picion of any Design.

' As soon as an Opportunity was allowed  
 ' her, she read the Letter, and concluded,  
 ' that *Don Pedro* was the Gentleman whom  
 ' she had observed fix his Eyes upon her at  
 ' Church, and to whose Person she was far  
 ' from making any Objection, if he was but  
 ' a Man of Quality. To learn this was a Dif-  
 ' ficulty she knew not how to surmount;  
 ' for she durst not enquire of any about her,  
 ' and she was permitted to receive no Visits,  
 ' but in the Presence of the Marchioness.

' After some Time considering, she hit  
 ' upon a Method which answered her Hopes.  
 ' When the Servants after Dinner were gone  
 ' out, and nobody in the Room with her  
 ' but the Marquis and his Lady, she asked the  
 the



' the former if he knew *Don Pedro de Pa-*  
 ' *tillos*, and who he was? The Marquis  
 ' was startled at her Questions, and enquired  
 ' why she made them; she answered with a  
 ' Smile, satisfy my Curiosity, and I will  
 ' give you my Reason, which perhaps may  
 ' surprize you. *Don Pedro*, replied the Mar-  
 ' quis, is Nephew to the Duke *D'Offuna*,  
 ' the *Spanish* Ambassador; a most dissolute  
 ' Wretch, a Scandal to his Family, and now  
 ' on his Travels. He gave him this vile Cha-  
 ' racter with such a visible Agitation, and  
 ' such a troubled Countenance, that *Donia*  
 ' *Maria*, now past fifteen, whose good Sense  
 ' was not inferior to her Beauty, easily per-  
 ' ceived his Apprehensions had blacken'd  
 ' *Don Pedro's* Reputation; and thence con-  
 ' cluded him the Reverse of what her Guar-  
 ' dian spoke him.

' Pray, said the Marquis, how did you  
 ' learn the Name of this young Nobleman;  
 ' and why do you enquire after him? Satisfy  
 ' yourself (answered the Countess *d'Albano*,  
 ' giving him *Don Pedro's* Letter) by reading  
 ' this romantic Stuff which I found in one  
 ' of my dressing Boxes; how it was con-  
 ' veyed thither I can't say; but am of O-  
 ' pinion it was not by Means supernatural;  
 ' without that profligate Wretch, *Don Pe-*  
 ' *dro*, is wicked enough to deal with the  
 ' Devil.

' While

‘ While the Marquis read the Letter, the  
‘ Countess *d’ Albano* observed his Countenance,  
‘ which, often changing, gave manifest  
‘ Signs of an inward Perplexity. He en-  
‘ deavoured to conceal his Emotion, gave  
‘ the Letter to his Lady for her Perusal, and  
‘ after a Silence of some few Minutes, said ;  
‘ my dear *Donia Maria*, I can’t but admire  
‘ and applaud your Prudence in this Proce-  
‘ dure. My Lord, replied she, I was not  
‘ so young at my Father’s Death, but I  
‘ very well remember he commanded me to  
‘ look upon, and obey you as my Parent.  
‘ His last Words are still deeply impress’d  
‘ in my Memory ; and as I never yet have  
‘ swerved from his Command, so I will ever  
‘ make you privy to, and be guided by your  
‘ greatly superior Judgment in all that re-  
‘ gards my Interest, which I am satisfied,  
‘ from the celebrated and long Friendship be-  
‘ tween yourself and my Father, you sin-  
‘ cerely have at Heart, and by your Years  
‘ and Experience can better judge of.

‘ I am, said the Marchioness, both char-  
‘ med and surprized to find your Beauty ri-  
‘ valled by your good Sense. You make a  
‘ right Judgment of the Marquis ; he can-  
‘ not have a more tender Affection for his  
‘ own Children, or a more disinterested Con-  
‘ cern for their Wellfare, than he has for  
‘ that of his beloved *Donia Maria*: And be-  
‘ lieve

lieve me, my dear Child, I shall not receive less Satisfaction to see your Happiness secured.

The Count *de Paruta*, a noble *Venetian*, whose Affairs had brought him to *Rome*, coming in to pay a Visit to the Marquis, prevented the young Lady from making a Reply. She and the Marchioness withdrew, and the latter proposing it, they went into the Garden, where, after Caresses on the one Hand mixed with Protestations of Affection and Esteem, and grateful Acknowledgments on the other, had taken up some of their Time, the Marchioness proceeded to Advice, blended with the most frightful Character of the licentious Nobility; on which Subject, as she was animated by her Interest, she was very florid and very warm, though she excused the Severity of some Expressions, by saying, they had escaped her, as the Concern she had for *Dania Maria* would not permit her to be altogether upon her Guard. But not a Word, not a Gesture, not a Diversity of Tone escaped the wary and penetrating young Lady, who seemingly gave Credit to, and appeared terrified with the Pictures she had drawn of all the young Noblemen in and about *Rome*, but especially with the Painting she had finished of *Don Pedro*.

They past the Afternoon in the Garden, and when the Evening came on, returned to the

the House, the Marchioness highly satisfied with the Impression she flattered herself she had made on *Donia Maria*; and this latter as greatly pleased with having duped her and the Marquis, and got the Knowledge of Don *Pedro's* Quality, for whom she had entertained favourable Sentiments, which had suffered no Prejudice from the Character given of him.

After Supper the Marquis beginning the Discourse with the Prudence and fine Sense of *Donia Maria*, which he greatly extolled, fell upon the Character of Don *Pedro*, and spoke him a Man who would hesitate at nothing, Rape, Murder or Sacrilege to gratify his Passions. That his Uncle the Duke *D' Ossuna* was so fond of him, he would believe nothing to his Disadvantage; and that Don *Pedro* had the Art to drive away all who came to complain to the Duke of Injuries sustained by his Irregularities, or more properly Enormities, having all his Excellency's Servants in his own Pay; wherefore my dear *Donia Maria*, said he, as I know the Violence of this young Nobleman's Temper, I judge it much more prudent to prevent a Mischief than to risque it, from an Opinion of either our Power or Interest. This Don *Pedro* is a Man capable, even in the Face of the Sun,

‘ Sun, and of this great City, to attempt the  
‘ carrying you off with a Troop of Bravos.

‘ It is certain, added the Marchioness,  
‘ that his Character speaks him a *Desperato* ;  
‘ and were I to advise the Countess *D’ Albano*,  
‘ it should be to retire to a Monastery, ’till  
‘ Don *Pedro* has left *Rome*, or ’till her Secu-  
‘ rity is provided for. It was, replied the  
‘ Marquis, my very Thoughts; but, said  
‘ *Donia Maria*, my absolute Aversion; your  
‘ Care magnifies the Danger. Men, where  
‘ they meet with no Encouragement, soon  
‘ cool in their Pursuit, and the Laws are too  
‘ severe for Don *Pedro* to dare an Attempt  
‘ of Violence upon a young Lady of my  
‘ Rank and Fortune. What have I to fear?  
‘ Are not your Prudence, my Lord, and your  
‘ Lady’s Example sufficient to inform me  
‘ how I ought to behave, though my own  
‘ Age may not be sufficient to answer for my  
‘ Conduct? I see no Reason for my being  
‘ made a Prisoner, because Don *Pedro*’s a  
‘ Libertine. Confine the Guilty not the In-  
‘ nocent: The Laws are sufficient for my  
‘ Protection; and, had I thought that my  
‘ Imprisonment would have been the Effect  
‘ of my shewing you his Letter, I would have  
‘ trusted to their Power, rather than have  
‘ entrusted you with the Secret.

‘ She spoke this with so visible an Emo-  
‘ tion, that it somewhat disconcerted both  
‘ the Marquis and his Lady. ‘ My

‘ My Dear, said the former, if our Care  
‘ for you makes us consider on the most pro-  
‘ per Means for your Security, tho’ they are  
‘ such as you may not relish, for Want of  
‘ having duly weigh’d both them and your  
‘ own Danger, it ought not to warn you into  
‘ a Resentment. Since you are so averse to a  
‘ Convent, we must think on some other Me-  
‘ thod to deliver you from the Importunity of  
‘ this dangerous *Spaniard*; I can see none,  
‘ answered the Marchioness, so effectual, as  
‘ that propos’d; and I don’t doubt the young  
‘ Countess being of our Opinion, when she  
‘ has consult’d her Pillow.

‘ I am pretty sure, replied *Donia Maria*, no  
‘ Danger will induce me to seek Refuge in a  
‘ Convent. And raising up, the Marquis called  
‘ for Lights. They parted very civilly, as Peo-  
‘ ple well bred do, though very little satisfied  
‘ with each other. A strange Servant-maid  
‘ carried a couple of Candles before her to her  
‘ Chamber, which was opened by an old  
‘ Gentlewoman, also unknown to *Maria*,  
‘ who saying to the Servant, she should see the  
‘ Lady in Bed, sent her away.

‘ The Countess *D’ Albano* was surprized,  
‘ but not displeased to find her former Gover-  
‘ nante gone; and was going to ask for her,  
‘ when this new Guard, making a low Cour-  
‘ tesy, said, Madam, I have the Honour to  
‘ be

' be appointed by the Marquis to attend you  
 ' in the Place of her, who was suspected of  
 ' having conveyed a Letter into your dressing  
 ' Box; I entreat your Ladyship not to be a-  
 ' larmed at this sudden Change in your Do-  
 ' mesticks; for whatever Tenderness you had  
 ' for my Predecessor, she could not have ac-  
 ' quired that Happiness with greater Obser-  
 ' vance, or more Zeal to prevent even your  
 ' Wishes, than you shall experience in me,  
 ' who, though engaged to be a Spy upon  
 ' your Actions, devote myself intirely to  
 ' your Service. She here made a low Cour-  
 ' tesy, expecting an Answer.

' The Countess, who suspected this Decla-  
 ' ration to be a Finesse, said, the removing  
 ' or continuing the Person who was last a-  
 ' bout her, was a Matter of great Indiffe-  
 ' rence; that she had no Secrets, consequent-  
 ' ly wanted no Confidante; and that, if the  
 ' Person discarded had been guilty of the  
 ' Indiscretion laid to her Charge, she deserved  
 ' to be so. If she was guilty, Madam,  
 ' did you know Don Pedro, you would  
 ' forgive her, replied the new Governante;  
 ' for certainly there is not in all the Patri-  
 ' mony of St. Peter so compleat a Cava-  
 ' lier, whether you examine his Person,  
 ' the Sweetness of his Temper, the Ad-  
 ' vantage he has made of a polite Educa-  
 ' tion, his Morals, or that universal Cha-  
 ' racter

‘ after which his good Sense and prudent  
 ‘ Conduct have acquired him.

‘ The Marquis, answered the Countess,  
 ‘ has given me a Picture of him, which  
 ‘ makes a quite different Figure; but which  
 ‘ of you does him Justice, is not worth  
 ‘ Enquiry. Saying this, she sat down to her  
 ‘ Toilet, and prepared for Bed. Her new  
 ‘ Attendant was going to justify Don *Pedro*,  
 ‘ but she imposed her Silence.

### C H A P. III.

*Continuation of the Story of the Countess D' Albano and Don Pedro de Patillos.*

**T**HE next Morning, soon as the Day appeared, she wrote a State of her Case, and the Following Letter, put both into a Cover, and concealed them in her Bosom.

*To Don PEDRO de PATILLOS.*

**T**HE Cruelty I have experienced, and a Design of forcing me into a Monastery, to get Possession of my Estate, will not allow my dissembling the Sentiments I have. . . I am not ignorant



*norant of your Character, and therefore do not  
hesitate in declaring, that, if you can find  
Means to deliver me from my present Confinement,  
I shall think myself happy in being the  
Wife of Don Pedro. With this, you have the  
Situation of the*

*Countess D' ALBANO.*

Having finished her Writing, she returned to Bed, where she had not long been, before her new Servants came in. Being dressed, she went down to Breakfast with the Marquis and his Lady, and with the latter went to Church. The Countess presently spied the Servant who had given her Don Pedro's Letter, and as she returned after Mass to the Coach, the Fellow being pretty close to her in the Crowd, put her Hand behind with the Papers, and the Fellow, who watched her every Motion, had a lucky Opportunity to take, and go off with them unperceived.

I won't pretend to describe to you the Transports of Don Pedro, on reading this Letter. He hugged the Servant, called him his good Genius, and clapped a Purse of Gold into his Hand, with which, 'tis possible, the Man was to the full as well pleased, as with the Caresses of a Nobleman; and it was as convincing a Proof to him, that he had per-

performed a grateful Service, having afterwards read the Case *Donia Maria* had drawn up and enclosed, shocked with the Ingratitude and Villany of the Marquis, he thought the best Method would be to consult some able Lawyer; though his first Care was to prevent the Danger which menaced his beloved Countess.

The Duke *D' Offana* being returned from the Cardinal Nephew, where he had been. *Don Pedro* waited on his Excellency, acquainted him with his Passion for *Donia Maria*, gave him the State of her Case drawn by herself, and, when he had read it, entreated his Excellency to advise him in what Method he judged it proper to proceed.

Nephew, said the Duke, I congratulate your good Fortune; but must tell you, that it behoves *Don Pedro* to be more circumspect how he proceeds, than another, as it may reflect upon the Honour of the King, my Master, should he do any Thing in Violation of the Laws, as it may be supposed that you were encouraged to it, by depending on my Protection, which I could not afford, let what would prove the Consequence, as I esteem the Honour of my Master, beyond even my own Life. I will send to *Senor Leontino* immediately, he is the most celebrated Advocate in *Rome*, and ask his A

vice what can be done to redress the injured Countess, and crown your Happiness.

The Duke sent without Loss of Time, and *Senior Leontino* accompanied the Messenger back; *Don Pedro* interpreted this Dispatch as an happy Omen.

The Duke, gave the Advocate the Case which the Countess herself had drawn up, and afterwards her Letter to *Don Pedro*. *Senior Leontino* advised the Duke to make a Visit to the Governor of *Rome*, adding that he would wait on him thither; and when he had lain before him the Hardships under which the Countess laboured, he was assured, as it was his Duty, that he would send for the Marquis and the Countess; take the latter into his Protection, and appoint a Day to hear the Complaints of the one, and the Justification of the other. The Advice was agreeable to both the Duke and *Don Pedro*. They and *Senior Leontino* instantly took Coach and drove to the Governor's Palace: He was luckily at home, but the Marquis was then with him, who, hearing that the Duke *D' Osuna*, *Don Pedro* and *Senior Leontino*, the Advocate, were come to wait on the Governor, as the Guilty are ever suspicious, imagined the Countess *D' Albano's* Affairs had occasioned this Visit, though he had not the least Notion of her having given any Answer to the Letter.

Being

Being very intimate with the Governor, he would step into another Room, and wait the Duke's Departure; which he instantly did, and the other went to receive his Excellency. The first Compliments over, *Senior Leontino* acquainted the Governor with the Cause of their waiting on him; and having very eloquently lain down the former narrow Circumstances of the Marquis; the unparalleled Friendship of the Count; the generous Trust reposed in him by that Nobleman; the great Obligations he was under to discharge that Trust with the utmost Gratitude and Probity; he then shewed, that the Marquis had acted diametrically contrary to his Friend's Confidence, all Principles of Gratitude, Honour and Justice; and concluded, with desiring the Governor to grant the Countess his Protection; to send for her from the House of the Marquis, summon him to answer the Charge which he, the Advocate, should lay against him, and appoint a Day to hear the Parties by their respective Advocates.

The Governor very much surprized at this Discourse of *Leontino*, replied, I ever looked upon that Nobleman as a Pattern of Honour, Justice and Gratitude. It is true, his Fortune from his Father was not answerable to either his Birth or Merit; and I believe all *Rome* rejoiced to see his Virtues

rewarded by the discerning Count *D' Albano*, who had long proved them, or would neither have left him equal with his Daughter, nor her under his absolute Power, as he has done, 'till either (if called to a religious Life) she took the Veil, or married with the Approbation of the Marquis. I cannot dispute the Will of the Dead, which must be literally complied with; therefore cannot take the Countess out of his Hands, to whom her Father has committed her; but if you will acquaint me, who it is that brings this Charge against the Marquis, I will write that Nobleman a Letter; appoint a Day for Hearing, and, am satisfied, it will contribute as much to his Honour, as to the Confusion of his Accuser. My Lord, said Don *Pedro*, I am that Accuser, and will stake my Life to make good my Accusation. Don *Pedro*, said the Governor, may be misinformed; I believe and hope he is; however I will send to the Marquis, and appoint *Senior Leontino*, addressing himself to the Advocate, the Day after to-Morrow to hear both Parties. On this Answer the Duke and his Company took their Leaves.

On the Governor's Return from complimenting his Excellency, he found the Marquis in the Room. My Friend, said he, I shall surprize you, when—— You may, replied the Marquis, spare yourself the Trouble

ble

ble of telling me the Cause of the Duke's Visit. I overheard all, and shall not fail, on the Day you have set, appearing, to make manifest the Malice of this Calumny; which I must own, notwithstanding the apparent Falsity, gives me some Emotion; but I hope the Evidence of the Countess herself will justify me in your Opinion, and that in the Interim it will make no Impression on you to my Disadvantage.

The Governor told him, it would be a very difficult matter to make him alter the Opinion he had long entertained of his Honour and Probity.

The Marquis took his Leave, and returned home, agitated with a thousand uneasy Thoughts. After Supper he asked the Countess, if she had heard any more of Don Pedro? She answered, no; and that she supposed, his Prudence in changing her Servants, had deprived him of the Canal, by which he had conveyed his romantic Epistle: Nay, replied the Marquis, his Epistle is less romantic than his Procedure. He has set himself up for your Guardian; was this Day with the Governor of Rome, and by the Mouth of the Advocate *Leontino*, inveighed against me, as an ungrateful unfaithful Friend, an unjust and a cruel Guardian; insisted on your being taken from under my Care, and that I should be summoned to answer the

Charge he had to lay against me on your Behalf. And by whose Authority? Answered the Countess. That we shall know, replied he, the Day after to Morrow. What Insolence! cried the Countess; I hope, my Lord, I shall be present, since no one is so proper to confound my Guardian, such Don *Pedro* sets up for, you say, and to convince him, that I am not to be treated like an Infant. I hope too, my Lord, the Governor will do you Justice, and think my Evidence of some Weight. Here the Marchioness came in; she had supped abroad.

The Marquis, whose Thoughts had been confused, did not take what the Countess had said, in the Sense she meant it; but answered, that he doubted neither her Prudence nor Affection: to which she replied, that for the former she would answer Nothing; but for the latter, he might assure himself, it was unalterable. After having made her Compliments to the Marchioness, she withdrew to her Bed-Chamber, thoroughly satisfied with the Conduct of Don *Pedro*.

The Marquis acquainted his Lady with what had passed, turning the Affair into a Jest; but she very gravely answered, that in her Opinion, it was a Matter of the greatest Consequence; for she could not suppose Don *Pedro* would have taken such a Step, if not by the Instigation of some Relations of the Countess,

ters, who had their particular Interests in View, by getting her out of his Hands; and who had possibly already made Terms to marry her to Don *Pedro*, knowing the Interest the Duke his Uncle had with his Holiness: That, if she did not conceive it impossible for the Countess to correspond with any body, without her Knowledge, she should suspect her of the Party, and look upon that Frankness, with which she imparted to them Don *Pedro's* Letter, as Dust thrown in their Eyes to blind them to her Intrigues. You heard, said the Marquis, the Protestation of unalterable Affection which she made me. That awakens my Suspicion, replied his Lady; we know how we have used her. Consider what you have at Stake, and take my Advice, remove Don *Pedro*, and you'll lay the Ax to the Root. The Conspirators, whoever they are, will lose the Protection of the Duke; your Accuser being taken off, prevents an Enquiry into your Conduct, and a Scrutiny into the Management of your Pupil's Estate; and, if she is in the Plot, though I think it next to impossible, her Hopes are entirely blasted. The Marquis said, it was a Method so base, he could never consent to it, though it were the Means of his Safety. How inconsistent, said she, are you with yourself? You hesitate at a necessary Murder, and yet designed that of your Friend's Daughter!



How! retorted the Marquis; I never once entertained the Thought. What, said the Lady, is the Design of forcing her into a Monastery, but that of the worst of Murders, a living Death? You must take your Choice; Don *Pedro* must die, or you be covered with Infamy, and perhaps beggar'd, which is still worse. If you want Courage for your Preservation, I do not: I know a Bravo, who, with his Companions, will sign Don *Pedro's* Passport for Heaven, and your Quietus on Earth, before the Day appointed for your Appearance.

The Marquis, who now saw the Danger of having his Conduct examined, and the fatal Consequences which might attend it, took his Lady's Advice, with Directions to the Bravo, who was married to a former Servant of hers.

The next Morning very early, the Marquis went to the Bravo's House. He was not up, but his Wife opened the Door, and called her Husband. The Marquis told him, that he wanted Don *Pedro* dispatched before the next Day. The Bravo asked, in what Don *Pedro* had injured him? I suppose, replied he, that is Nothing to the Purpose, if I pay you your Price. How, Sir! cried the Bravo, do you take me for a Man without either Honour or Conscience? No, Sir, if he has not deserved to die; and if I am not so far

be satisfied of this, as to have Nothing from my Conscience to reproach me for having passed his Sentence, all the Gold you are Master of, will not bribe me, I have a tender Regard for Justice; but being a Judge of what comes under that Definition, as well as an Executioner of it, I am very cautious of having innocent Blood to account for: There is another World, Sir, after this. The Marquis had much ado to keep his Countenance. Sir, said he, won't you take my Word, that ——— Sir, replied the Bravo, interrupting him once more, I will take no Man's Word: Here is a Life in Question, and I must be satisfied in my Conscience, that the Crime merits Death. Well, said the Marquis, if it must be so, I will lay the State of the Case before you, which having done, he asked the Bravo's Opinion. Sir, answered he, I have not let a Word escape me. I find this Don *Pedro*, without previous Injury offered by you, endeavours to stab your Reputation, which is dearer to a Man of Honour, than Life; consequently he intends a black Murder, which kills beyond the Grave, if I may use the Expression, and is more horrid, than the Punishment which he lays you under a Necessity of inflicting: Self-Preservation is the first Law of Nature; besides, Sir, I observe he is a busy-body, meddling with other People's Affairs, which

no way concern him; and it would be well for the World, if all such were thrust out of it. On the whole, I am of Opinion he ought not to live long enough to perpetrate his designed Mischief. There is my Hand, he shall be Worms Meat before the Time. How does he go attended; and where is he to be met with at Night? He has, answered the Marquis, commonly three Servants with him, and he frequents all the Assemblies, Balls, Operas and Concerts: He makes one at all Entertainments. We shall have him, answered the Bravo, this Night at the Countess *Fenicia's*, where most of the Quality meet, to hear a private Rehearsal of a new Opera; we will dog him thence, and give you a good Account of him by to-Morrow before this Time. I must take three Companions with me; and they will expect two hundred Crowns a Man. You know, Sir, in Engagements of this Nature, the Money is always paid before hand. But suppose the Business is not done, said the Marquis? Sir, replied the other, you have to deal with Men of Honour; you might have been convinced of it, by my not asking who you are; and taking your Story under feigned Names, as you own you told it. Leave me nine hundred Crowns; if the Business is not done, you may to-Morrow, at this Time call, and have your Money returned, except any one of

of us is killed or wounded; in such Case the Share of the dead Man is deducted for his Widow; or the Money for his Cure, as if we had succeeded; and double the Surgeon's Bill for Smart-Money: Those who come off unhurt, trust to the Generosity of the Patron for their lost Time.

Before you can be dressed, replied the Marquis, I will be here with the Money. He left the Bravo, kept his Word, and returned home to give the Marchioness an Account of his Negotiation, which allayed her Fears.

The Bravo's Wife, who had let in the Marquis, knowing him, was curious to learn what Business he had with her Husband at such an early Hour; and listening at the Door, heard every Word that passed.

This Woman's Kinsman, whose Mother had brought her up, on the Death of her Parents, happened at that Time not only to be Valet to Don *Pedro*, but his Favourite, to whom he had been an indulgent and generous Master. She feared the Ruin of her Cousin's Fortune, which he expected to make under Don *Pedro*; and in Gratitude for his Mother, her Aunt's Care, in her Infancy, on her Husband's going out, ran to this Kinsman, and acquainted him with what she had heard. He begged she would stay and speak to his Master, who was then asleep; but the Valet made no Ceremony in waking

waking him; and having said no more than, Sir, your Life's in Danger, ran out, and brought in the Woman. She capitulating for her Husband, and engaging Don *Pedro's* Promise never to let it be known whence he had his Intelligence, recounted Word for Word what she had heard; and, without staying for an Answer, made the best of her Way home: where, she had the good Fortune to be before her Husband; who did not suspect her having been abroad, as she was undress'd again, and employ'd in her Household Affairs. He gave her Money; told her three Friends were to dine with him; order'd a handsome Dinner; added they had private Business, and she might when Dinner was upon Table and the Wine set by them, go and visit a Friend: they should want no farther Attendance. Having comply'd with these Orders, the three Bravos being come, the Dinner and every Thing ready according to his Directions, she went to give her Kinsman an Account of the Whole.

Don *Pedro* had been with the Duke in his Apartment, who having heard the Discovery made to his Nephew by the Bravo's Wife, suspected the Governor's Friendship to the Marquis would make him partial; and therefore instead of applying to him a second Time, resolv'd to go strait to the  
*Vatican,*

*Nation*, and demand an Audience of his Holiness.

As his Excellency was going down Stairs, the Bravo's Wife came into the Hall. Don *Pedro* who knew the Woman, told the Duke; and he turning back ordered her to be brought to him. She repeated the Information before given to Don *Pedro*, with the additional Circumstance of the three Bravos being then in her House at Dinner with her Husband.

The Duke, on this Intelligence, sent several Servants to observe all who should come out of that House; so as to know them again; gave the Woman a Purse of Gold, and bid her go visit some Friend of her Husband's Acquaintance, to prevent her being suspected. His Excellency then went to the *Nation*, asked and obtained an Audience of his Holiness, who equally surprized and mock'd at the Duke's Account of the design'd Villainy, would himself, give Orders to the Captain of the Guards.

Every Thing being agreed upon, Don *Pedro*, somewhat before the Dusk of the Evening, drove to the Countess *Fernand's*, before whose Door were two of the Bravos seemingly in earnest Discourse, and a Servant of the Duke's at a little Distance, who had followed them from the House where they dined. After Don *Pedro* was gone in, one  
of

of them drawing near to the Coachman, said, this is a fine Equipage ; is it permitted to ask whom it belongs to ? It belongs, replied one of the Lackeys, who knew the Reason of the Question, to Don Pedro de Patillos, Nephew to the Spanish Ambassador. The Gentleman, said the Bravo, who just went into the Countess *Fenicia's* ? The same answered the Servant. The Bravos took Leave of each other ; but the Duke's Lackeys at a Distance waited upon them, saw them one after another enter a Tavern in an adjoining Street, and soon after, their two Companions, who had also the Duke's Servants to attend them, tho' they did not do them the Honour of wearing his Livery, went into the House. Notice was immediately given to the Captain of the Guards, of what had pass'd. He came with his Lieutenant and Ensign ; asked for the Master of the House, and told him he must have a Room adjoining to that in which were the four Gentlemen, and charged him, as he valued his Life to be secret.

The Master placed the Officers in a Room divided from the other by a Board Partition only. They put out the Candles, and listen'd very attentively to the Discourse of the Bravos, who after a great many Places, pitch'd upon and objected to, at length, unanimously resolv'd on one as the properest for the

the Attack. This being fix'd, a Bravo was detach'd to enquire what Time the Company would break up, and to see if Don *Pedro's* Coach was still waiting. He return'd soon, and told them the Don's Coach was there; that they might safely take another Bottle for the Rehearsal was but just begun, and it would be two Hours at least before it would be gone through. The Officers who over-heard all, went down, and two of them took a Room; called for a Bottle of Wine, and the third went to dispose the Guard in such a Manner, that the Bravos could neither perpetrate their villainous Design nor escape falling into the Hands of Justice. The Officers again called the Master, and told him, if he gave those four Men; or any of them Notice or the least Hint, and that they or any of them escaped, he must expect to answer for it with his Life. He answer'd, and possibly spoke Truth, that he knew not one of them; and were they of his Acquaintance, he had more Friendship for himself and Family, than for the nearest Relation he had.

Soon after, the Bravos calling for their Reckoning went off; and the Officers followed them at some Distance. The Rehearsal was just ended, and several of the Quality's Coaches gone, when Don *Pedro's* was ordered to come up. The Bravos, who  
were



were in the Crowd; before the Door, drew near; but his and the Duke's Servants prevented their coming within reach. When Don Pedro appeared at the Gate, the Bravos supposing he would go into the Coach, and that they were sure of their Prey, hastened to their Post, as did also the Officers. Don Pedro having Notice by his Scouts that they were withdrawn, went with the Count *Tripathis* in his Coach. The Curtains of his own were drawn close, and it drove off with his two Servants behind as if he had been in it. When it came to the Place where the Bravos lay in wait, the Coachman was ordered by one of them to Stop; which he had no sooner done, but the Guard placed in adjoining Houses, surrounded; seized the Russians and carried them to the Guard-chamber without the least Noise. The Inhabitants of the Houses where the Soldiers had been lodged, had been amused with a Story of seizing some Traitors to the State, and charged on their Peril not to mention it, lest others, not yet taken might escape. So that the seizing of these Villains was a Secret in Rome, except to such as were concerned in the Affair.

The next Day, as it was industriously spread, the Report went that Don Pedro had the Night before been assassinated; and Care was taken, that the Marquis should be one of the first.

first acquainted with the News. The Joy his Lady and he conceived, is scarce to be expressed; especially, that of the Former, who advised her Husband to dissemble his Knowledge of this Murder, and to go to the Governor's, whither she would follow him with the Countess *D'Albem*, as she soon did, without mentioning one Word of Don *Pedro's* Death. They had not been long there, before the Advocate *Leontine* came in, and told the Governor, that his Principal Don *Pedro*, being the last Night assassinated, he might if he pleas'd, discharge the Marquis from farther Attendance. The Marquis and his Lady seem'd greatly surpriz'd at the News; and the poor Countess had much ado to support herself. The Advocate ran to her; whisper'd that it was a false Report, for her Service, and asking for a Glas of Water, she drank it and came pretty well to herself. The Marchioness said, Madam. I find your Concern for an entire Stranger as great as 'tis to me surprizing; we had best make Haste home that we may not be troublesome to my Lord the Governor, should you again be attacked by one of these fainting Fits. Madam, said the Advocate, the Lady must, by an Order from his Holiness, stay with my Lord the Governor, giving him at the same Time a Paper; but you and the Marquis may return when you please.

This

This was a Clap of Thunder which put them both into the greatest Agony. That supreme Magistrate saying he must obey the Commands of his Holiness, told the Countess, that notwithstanding, in that Paper, she was charged with the Murder of Don *Pedro*, she would find his Lady endeavour to make her Confinement easy. The Marquis and Marchioness who comprehended nothing of all this, took their Leaves of the Governor, saying they should expect his Holiness's Pleasure with regard to the Countess.

They drove home; but how great was their Astonishment to see all their Servants in the Hall, with a Company of Soldiers, and the Doors of the Rooms sealed up! before they could recover from their Surprise, an Officer told the Marquis, that he had an Order to secure him; to seal up the Doors of his House, and to place a Guard upon it: Wherefore he hoped the Lady would excuse him if, in Obedience to his Command, he could not permit her going farther; that the Coach she came in, should carry her wherever she would please to appoint; but he was obliged to send two Soldiers to see that it and the Horses were returned. What said the Lady means this unaccountable Procedure? I fear said the Officer you will find it too well accounted for.

for. I have Madam, no Time to lose, if the Marquis pleases to go into my Coach, I will wait on him, and Madam you are at your Liberty to go where you think fit. She replied that she would go with her Husband; but that Favour was denied. He half dead, was put into a Coach with three Officers, and carried back to the Governors, where by this Time, the Bravos were in the Hall, with their Fetters on and well guarded. When the Marquis saw the Assassin with whom he had agreed for the Murder, they had much ado to keep Life in him. Being brought to the Governor, he cried out my Lord, ask me no Questions; I am a Villain, Justice has overtaken me; I bless the divine Providence that he has detected me, and desire nothing more than an immediate Death. He then, at the Governor's Request, made and signed an ample Confession.

On his being removed, the Assassins were brought in, but would own nothing, and the Principal of them denied any Knowledge of the Marquis. To make short, they were condemn'd to the Gallies for Life; but their Captain had, on his Wife's Account, a Pardon, on giving Security for his future good Behaviour. All the Estates and Effects of the Marquis were confiscated to the Use of the Countess *D'Albano*, and he was condemn'd to lose his Head; but by her Intercession,  
his

his Sentence was changed to perpetual Imprisonment. It was of short Duration. He died in three Months. His Lady retired to her Son's House for some little Time. After the Death of her Husband she went into a Convent of *Poor Clares*, and his Children, had they not been saved by the Compassion of the Countess who was put into the Possession of her Father's whole Estate, and all that her false Guardian had amassed from out of it, must have been Nagabonds. But that good Lady settled handsome Fortunes upon them. She was publicly married to Don *Pedro*, her Deliverer, by the Pope himself, who would do them that Honour. She staid with her Husband at *Rome*, till the Duke desired to be recalled, when she came with her dear Don *Pedro* to *Spain*, and lives here admired and beloved by all who have the Honour of her Acquaintance.

My Brother having finished his Narrative, received the Applause and thanks of his Audience. We chatted of indifferent Things some little Time, expecting the Return of the rest of our Company; but they not appearing we went into the Garden to join them.

Before we came up to the Company, we perceived, from the Terrace Walk, a Coach with four Mules, attended by a Number of Servants mounted and armed, coming up the Avenue :

Avenue; from which Equipage a Horseman passed on, we gave Notice. We immediately told Don *Alfonso* of the near Approach of some Visitor of Distinction. This Advice brought us all into the House, where we met a Servant running to acquaint my Patron, that the Countess *Ximena* was just arrived to pay him a Visit. We hastened to the Door to receive her, and were there Time enough for Don *Alfonso* to offer his Hand for her Alighting. My Brother had the Honour to assist a beautiful young Lady about thirteen, her Daughter, and hand her into the House.

Notice was immediately given to the Countess *Leyva*, who, with my Mother and Aunt, came down, and complimented the new Guests. This Lady, who had been a Widow four Years, though but eight and twenty, was a near Relation of my Mother's, as was also her deceased Husband, to whom she was married by Dispensation, on Account of their Consanguinity. She had been at *Madrid*, to solicit some Affairs, and returning to *Xativa*, in the Neighbourhood of which Town she and her Daughter had large Possessions, left her direct Road to visit Don *Alfonso* and my Uncle and Mother; designing to have gone to *Jutella*, if she had not luckily, as she termed it, met them at *Leyva*.

She was a Lady every way agreeable, though she could not be called a Beauty; her Judgment

ment was solid; her Wit lively, and her Conversation extremely entertaining and easy. She had been sometime with her Husband, when he was Ambassador at the *French* Court; the Gaiety of that Nation had corrected the *Spanish* Gravity.

Her Family was possessed of the Lordship and Castle of *Ximenes*, long since demolished, before the *Moors*, instigated by Count *Julian*, made an Irruption into *Spain*, in the Year 713, *Roderick* the thirteenth and last King of the *Goths*, then reigning. The *Moors*, being victorious in a general Battle fought between *Xeres* and *Medina Sidonia* in *Andaluzia*, in which the *Goths* and *Spaniards* were entirely routed, found no farther Obstacle to their Conquests. The Nobility, with such as escaped the Slaughter, flying into *Asturias*, *Biscay*, and the Parts adjoining to the *Pyrenean* Mountains for Shelter; *Suñez*, then Lord of *Ximenes*, from whom the Lady and her Husband were lineally descended, with a Handful of such Troops as he could gather together of the scattered Remains of the Army, retired to the Hills near *Segura*, where he, meeting with others, who had taken Azyle in those Parts, they defended themselves so well, and their Example was so bravely followed by their Posterity, that the *Moors* could never reduce them. When the Affairs of *Spain* took a more fortunate

tunate Turn, and those of the *Moors* declined; the Descendants of *Suinza* recovered their ancient Possessions by the Dint of the Sword; and have ever since held them. The Male-Line being extinct, the young Lady, Daughter of the Countess, became sole Heir to both the Estates and Titles of this Family.

She was about thirteen Years old, and very pretty, but a very Child of her Age, having been bred in a Monastery; which, with me greatly abated the Charms of her Person. Her Innocency had a different Effect on my Brother, as it seemed to add to the Force of her Beauty, which had struck him. From the Moment he saw her, he became her Admirer; and grew so far enamoured, in the few Days the Countess staid, that we all perceived a visible Alteration in him.

One Evening, before I left *Leyva*, the Countess *Seraphina* told *Senior Scipio*, that it was with some Impatience she had waited the Performance of his Promise to relate his Adventures in *America*; which, she was satisfied, the Lady *Ximenes* would also be very glad to hear.

*Senior Scipio* answered; that he should readily give the Satisfaction desired, but feared she would have Reason to think her Attention a Loss of so much Time.



On the contrary, I am of Opinion, it will be so much Time expended to Advantage; replied the Lady. It is, Madam, sufficient for me to obey the Honour of your Commands, without Apology, rejoined *Senior Scipio*, wherefore I shall make none, but proceed to satisfy your Curiosity.

The whole Company, then at *Leyva*, being attentive, *Don Scipio* began in the following Manner:

#### CHAP. IV.

*The Adventures of Senior Scipio, His Voyage to la Vera Cruz. His Journey from thence to Mexico. The Story of Count Xeres and Don Alphonso de Alarcas, whom Scipio became acquainted with in that Journey.*

MY former Voyage having taught me what Merchandize was most advantageous, and of the quickest Vent in *America*, I purchased a considerable Cargo, which, with my own Money, some I borrowed of *Don Gil Blas*, and some that I took up at *Cales* on the Credit of my Voyage, amount-  
ed

ed to forty thousand Crowns. This being shipped on Board the *St Joseph*, and the Fleet ready to sail, I took my Passage in the same Ship. Without any cross Accident, in eleven Weeks, our Fleet arrived at *St John de Ulbua*, or *la Vera Cruz*.

We were received with great Joy, and went in solemn Procession to return Thanks, in the Cathedral, for our prosperous Voyage.

I made all possible Dispatch to get my Goods on Shore, and hired a Requa of Mules to quit *la Vera Cruz*, as soon as possible, the Town being very unhealthy, on Account of its Situation; the South-west Side is bordered with a marshy boggy Soil; the other Parts are surrounded with Sand, and the intense Heat of the Sun exhaling the stagnated Waters on the one, causes a morbid Stench, and its Rays being reverberated from the Sand on the other Sides, makes the Violence of this Reflection almost intolerable.

Having laden my Mules, I set out for *Mexico*, tho' I might have disposed of my Commodities at *la Vera Cruz*, at a hundred *per Cent.* Profit.

We were in Company above thirty Persons, besides Muleteers. Among my fellow Travellers were nine young *Dominican* Friars,

on the Mission, to whom the *Indians* of the Towns, we passed through, paid little less than Divine Honours. The third Night we reached *Xalappa de la Vera Cruz*, a large Town, containing some two thousand Inhabitants, *Spaniards* and *Indians*. Here I first observed the Luxury of the Regular Clergy, who dress more foppishly, than a *French petit Maître* of Quality, and live more voluptuously, than the *Roman*, who could not sleep with a Rose-Leaf doubled under him. They seem to have left their Vows in *Europe*; or to have forgot that they ever made those of Poverty and Chastity; being full of Money, and remarkable for their Amours, which they have not Modesty enough to endeavour at concealing from public Knowledge.

In our Way to this Town, I made Acquaintance with two elderly Gentlemen of the Caravan, if I may so call our Band of Travellers, attended by four Servants. As they had no Merchandize with them, and the Air rather of Men of Quality than of Traders; were extremely reserved, and seemed to be under some Pressures of Mind. I endeavoured to divert them in our Journey, and to insinuate my self into their good Opinion by little Services; that I might, by gaining their Confidence, satisfy my Curiosity, which was very great to know who they

were, and what had brought them into a Part of the World, which, I believe, no one ever visited for Pleasure.

As I had before passed this Road, I was furnished against the Inconveniencies, I then suffered in the Journey; and offered them such Refreshments from Time to Time, as they had no Notion of providing; which, however, they found requisite, and received thankfully; one of them with a good natured Complaisance, but the other after a Manner that shewed, he was mortified in being constrained to receive an Obligation from a Man, whom he looked upon greatly his Inferior.

When we were near to *Xalappa*, I sent a Servant before to Don *Rodrigo de Calles*, a very wealthy Merchant, with whom I had before dealt. He was so glad to hear of my Return, that he came out of the Town to meet, and carry me home with him. After the usual Compliments, I shewed him the two Gentlemen, told him my Curiosity, and desired he would allow me to offer them his House. He answered very courteously, I should do him Pleasure and Honour. I then addressed my self to, and told them, the Town before us was large indeed, but they would find the Inns very far from affording them those Conveniencies, which might be expected by Strangers to the Country; wherefore, as my

E 3

Friend,

Friend, who had a good House, where they would want Nothing to refresh their Spirits after the Fatigue of their Journey, and enable them by Rest, to support that of the remaining Part, had made me an Offer of it, I should think my self honoured, if they would allow me to conduct them thither: Don *Rodrigo* seconded me in my Invitation, and they, after some Excuses, accepted the Favour, as they pleased to term it.

Being arrived at Don *Rodrigo's* House (more like the Palace of a Vice-Roy, than the Residence of a Merchant) we found every Thing uniform; the Furniture as rich as the House was magnificent; a Number of Servants answerable to the Figure of both, and a Table as polite and abounding, as all the rest was grand and noble. The Countenances of the two Gentlemen betrayed their Surprize at what they observed.

I proposed here to rest our selves a few Days; and the elder of the two Strangers said, he would be very glad to come into the Proposal; but did not know how to be so troublesome to Don *Rodrigo*, as he should be embarrassed to make an adequate Return for the Obligation he had already lain them under. Sir, replied the generous Merchant, you are not in *Europe*; that Hospitality, which the *Europeans* have banished, has taken Refuge, and is embraced in *America*:

*merica.* To take off all Uneasiness on that Head, give me Leave to assure you, that your Stay will not cost me a Real of Plate extraordinary; I have always the same Number of Dishes; and the Using my Beds is doing me Service: My Fortune, by Providence blessing my Industry, is ample, and I have all that my Heart can wish for in the World, except the Advantage of good Company; wherefore the Obligation is far from being on your Side; 'tis I who am indebted; and the longer you stay, the greater that Obligation will be. Sir, said the other, this Answer imposes me Silence, and obliges me to accept the generous Offer you make, which I can't refuse, without seeming to doubt your Veracity.

The rest of our fellow Travellers were to pursue their Journey next Day, wherefore I ordered my Requa to go forward with them, and sent an Express to a Merchant of my Acquaintance in *Mexico*, to receive my Goods, and hire me a handsome House, genteely, conveniently and thoroughly furnished.

We passed the next Day, without stirring from the House; the third we made the Tour of the Town. At Night the Elder of the two Strangers found himself feverish, was blooded, and retired early to his Chamber; as he had a tolerable Night's Rest, was

somewhat better the next Morning, but desired to be excused from quitting his Chamber. We, *Rodrigo* and I, for his Friend would not quit him, went thither to pay a Visit to the Gentleman indisposed. He received us with great Complaisance, and expressed his Uneasiness, at being obliged to give so much Trouble, where he was so great a Stranger. My Friend endeavoured, in the most obliging Terms, to put an End to his Concern on that account, and I took the Liberty to say, I feared he had something which lay heavy upon his Mind, as the Melancholy, visible in his Countenance, spoke some corroding Grief, which might give Strength to his Fever, if he did not make Use of his Reason to overcome it.

Humane generous Strangers, said he, there is Nothing more easy, than for the healthy Man to preach Patience to the Sick ; or for him, who is at Ease in his Mind, to give a Lecture of Stoical Philosophy to the Afflicted. *Senior Scipio*, you have guessed right; the Misfortune and Affront I have fallen under, prey more upon my Mind, than the Fever upon my Body ; however, the Hopes of Revenging the former, and of wiping off the Blemish of the latter, give me some Ease, and will, I hope, support me. This is my Errand to *Mexico* ; neither Curiosity, nor lucrative Views could have made  
me

me taken so long a Voyage. No; they are Justice, and our injured Honour, which have brought us to *America*. When I am less faint than I now find my self, I will acquaint you with my Story, and leave you to judge, whether meer Man can well support under such Infiictions.

Don *Rodrigo*, continued he, we have Letters of Credit to *Pedro Mendoza* of *Mexico*; if my Illness should oblige me to be many more Days troublesome, I must entreat you will add to the Obligations we already are under, that of sending some trusty Person thither, who may bring me Money; for what we have about us, may be exhausted, if I should have Doctors Fees and Apothecaries Bills to pay. *Rodrigo* answered, he should not want any Money he pleased to ask; wherefore that Care was needless. He prayed, that a Physician might be sent for, who, having visited him, was of Opinion, he only wanted Rest, with a Composure of Mind, and that he was in no manner of Danger. He made a right Judgment; for in a Week he was perfectly recovered.

We staid twenty Days with *Rodrigo*, who shewed a real Concern at our Departure.

The Night before we set out to continue our interrupted Journey, the Gentleman who had been ill, said, I remember I promised you, generous Strangers, my Story; 'tis a



Debt, which I will now discharge in few Words.

My Name is *Geronimo* ; that of the Family to which I owe my descent, *Varon* ; if not the most illustrious, it is however well known in *Castile*, the Kingdom where I first saw Light. The Title of Count *de Xeres*, and the Estate which bears that Name, in *Andalusia*, descended to me from my Grandfather by my Mother, on the Extinction of the male Line of his Family.

I shall not trouble you with any Part of my Life but what is necessary to let you in to my Misfortune. In my Neighbourhood dwelt Don *Henarez de Rialto* a Gentleman of great Worth and Fortune ; he liv'd to see the two Sons, he had, arrive at the Age of Maturity ; and dying, left the Bulk of his Estate to the Elder, Don *Diego* : to the younger, Don *Lopez*, he gave a considerable Fortune in ready Money and some Lands.

To these two, whom I must allow accomplish'd Gentlemen, I owe the Destruction of my Family, and the Fatigues of a long and perilous Voyage.

I was blessed with a Son and a Daughter.—Were I to give you the Character they bore in the World, you would be apt to suspect a paternal Fondness rendered me partial in their Favour.

My

---

My Son Don *Henarez*, who received that Name from his Godfather, my Neighbour already mentioned, being of the same Age, and learning his Exercises under the same Masters, contracted an Intimacy with Don *Lopez*. In Time they conceived such a Tenderness for each other, that they were distinguished by the Appellation of the two Friends.

Don *Diego*, who often favoured me with his Visits, and with whom I lived in a neighbourly Correspondence, became enamoured of my Daughter *Juella*, and asked my Consent to make his Addressee to her. I could not wish to see my Child more advantageously disposed of, having fixed my Eye on him, for a Son in Law, long before he desired to become so, or at least before he discovered such an Inclination, I had remarked that in his Temper he was humane and benevolent; his Sense was solid, his Conversation entertaining; his Behaviour affable, and insinuating; his Person well made, his Face manly and agreeable; his Air grand and easy. In a Word he was a Cavalier to whom a Lady might give her Heart without bringing any Censure on her Judgment; and to these Endowments of the Mind and Body, he was Master of a plentiful Estate. Wherefore I had reason to flatter myself that my Daughter would be happy with such a Husband.

Husband. You ~~may~~ imagine he very easily gained my Consent, and was not long before he made himself Master of *Futella's* Affections. In a Word ; every Article, previously necessary to their Marriage, being regulated between us, the Lawyers had their Instructions to prepare the Deeds. When these were finished and executed, the Day was to be appointed for Performance of the Ceremony, against which both Don *Diego* and my self made great Preparations.

I ought to have acquainted you that our Estates were situated in the Neighbourhood of *Siguença*. In the Interim, two Gentlemen named Don *Antonio*, and Don *Ramiro*, the former dwelling in that City, the latter a near Neighbour to Don *Diego*, having a Dispute about the Limits of their Estates, contiguous to each other, to avoid the tedious and expensive Forms of Law, resolved to decide their Quarrel by the Sword, and to bring each of them a Second.

Don *Ramiro* took with him Don *Lopez*, into the Field. Don *Antonio* pitched upon and was accompanied by my Son. The Particulars of this Duel you can't expect from me, who know such only as Don *Lopez* gave upon his Examination. As it is not to be doubted he told them in the most favourable Manner possible, I build no Faith  
on

on the Account he delivered, who was the only one of the four that survived.

I allow that a Labourer, ditching not far from the Spot, on which the two Couple fought, corroborated by his Oath, what Don *Lopez* had advanced: *viz.* that he would have avoided fighting with my Son, who forced him to draw his Sword; that when he was attacked by Don *Henarez*, he acted on the Defensive only, parrying his Thrusts and retiring: that he often called to him so loud, that the Labourer could distinctly hear the Words, to remember their Friendship, and not pursue the Life of a Man, who would willingly lose it to preserve his: that my Son answering his Honour was dearer to him than all other Consideration, rushing upon Don *Lopez*, wounded him in the right Arm, and himself on the Sword of the other in the Thigh, of which Wound he expired (the great *Vena Cava* being cut through as the Surgeons found on Inspection of the Body) that when *Lopez* saw his Friend fall, he ran, embraced, and held him in his Arms 'till he fetched his last Gasps. That *Antonio* had closed in with and fallen upon Don *Ramiro*, who was weltering in his Gore: That *Lopez* coming towards them, *Antonio* nimbly recovered his Feet, and expecting *Lopez* who flew upon him with the Rage of a Lion, crying he had robbed him of more than Life

Life, in the Loss of his Friend. That *Antonio*, though wounded in several Places by *Don Ramiro*, fought with great Resolution, but at length received a Thrust in his Breast which laid him dead, near the Gentleman whom he had killed. But may not the Peasant have been instructed and bribed to swear these Particulars?

The holy Brotherhood having had some inkling of this Duel, came to the Spot, time enough to take *Don Lopez*; but too late to prevent the Tragedy. They carried him to the Castle of *Seguença*, where he was confined. The *Cortes* then sitting, would take Cognizance of this Affair, and ordered *Don Lopez* to be escorted to *Madrid*, which you doubtless know, is just Twenty-two Leagues distant from *Seguença*. They had long endeavoured to put an End to private Duels, by Severity; and it was believed that *Lopez* would leave his Head upon a Scaffold. Nay, that no Interest could save him.

This unhappy Affair broke off the intended Match; I could not think of giving my Daughter to so near a Relation of my Son's Murderer; and I imagined he could have no longer Thoughts of marrying into the Family of a Man who pursued the Life of his Brother.

The

The Orders being come for removing *Lopez*, from the Castle of *Seguence* to *Madrid*, ten Horsemen of the holy Brotherhood, with an Officer, were commanded to escort him.

Don *Diego*, who tenderly loved his Brother, mustered up a Dozen of his Friends, disguised and sett upon this Guard, the second Day of their Journey; rescued *Lopez*, and with him got off, spite of the diligent Pursuit made after them. It is believed he had bribed the Escorte, as they made little or no Defence before they took to Flight.

Don *Alphonso de Alarcas*, the Gentleman who instigated me to, and is my Companion in this Voyage, when he thought Decency would permit, asked *Jutella* in Marriage. As he is nobly descended and an advantageous Party, I gave him my Consent, and ordered my Daughter to receive his Visits as those of a Cavalier I esteemed, and designed her Husband. I found her quite averie to my Intentions, and treated Don *Alphonso* in a Manner that made him Despair of obtaining her Consent: Wherefore I resolved to make use of the Authority of a Parent, and told her, since she was blind to her Interest, I should lose no farther Time; but required her to prepare her self to give her Hand to Don *Alphonso*, that Day ten'night, which I had pitched upon for that of their Marriage. She answered me coldly, that I might

might dispose of her Person, as that was in my Power, but could not give her Heart to *Alphonso*, which Don *Diego* had carried with him.

The next Day as she did not come to Dinner, I sent to know the Reason, and her Servant answered that her Lady was indisposed, and could not leave her Bed. I imagined this an Effect of Obstinacy; and resolved to seem careless, and let her have Time to come to herself.

I made no farther Enquiry, 'till the fourth Day, towards the Evening, when I went to her Chamber; but neither she nor the Servant who attended her was to be found. None of my Domesticks had seen the latter about the House, from the first Day of my Daughter's pretended Sicknefs.

Her Chamber was in Disorder, and on Examination, I perceived she had taken no female Cloaths with her; which made me conclude her Escape was in those of her deceased Brother. On this Thought I visited his Wardrobe, whence two Suits being taken, I was convinced she and her Attendant had gone off in them; but what Road they had taken, I had not the least Light to discover.

I immediately acquainted Don *Alphonso* with my Misfortune. He advised the examining her Escrutore, as possibly I might  
there

there find some Letters to guide me in my Search after her; concluding, that she had received Intelligence from, and was gone to Don *Diego*.

We looked into every Drawer, but found nothing to give us the least Information of the Road she had taken. There was no Letter from Don *Diego*, as we did imagine, her Jewels, we discovered, she had either sent before or taken with her.

After a tedious and fruitless Search, as we came out of a Closet in her Apartment, Don *Alphonso* perceived a Paper, which doubtless she dropped in her Hurry; it proved to be a Letter from *Diego*, informing her of his and his Brother's lying concealed at *Cadiz* under the Names of *Fernando* and *Gomez*, in the House of an *English* Merchant named *Bennett*.

'Tis there, cried Don *Alphonso*, that we shall find the lovely Fugitive: Let us instantly take Horse and revenge ourselves on the Murderer of your Son, and the Ravisher of my Wife.

The Mention of my Son's Death, awakened all my almost smothered Animosity; and the Flight of my Daughter, to which, no Doubt Don *Diego* was privy, banished all other Thoughts than those of taking severe Vengeance on all the three.



I ordered our Horses to be got ready, and though Dinner was coming upon Table, so strong was our Resentment of the Injury (which remains still as deeply impressed in our Minds) we would not stay, but mounted and set forward for *Cadiz*, putting our Horses to the utmost Speed. At the Close of the Day, we found that they could not hold out; wherefore we hired fresh and rode the better Part of the Night, with all the Expedition our Beasts would allow. About two o'Clock in the Morning we came to a little Town, the Name has escaped my Memory, and got fresh Horses.

We had not rid above two Leagues when *Alphonso* had the Misfortune of his Horse falling, and rowling upon him, by which unhappy Accident he was very much bruised. We were half a League (as we found by Experience) from any House. The Moon indeed shone; but with a faint Light, as the Weather was cloudy. Our Servants took him up, unable to help himself, and I who rode before to seek for some publick or Farm-House, the latter of which I found at the Distance I have mentioned, returned with Help, and got him to a warm Bed. In a neighbouring Village called *Alcala*, lived a Surgeon who came and blooded him: but he was not, for the Space of a Week, able to move himself.

That

That we might not by this Accident lose our Fugitives, I sent away a Servant express to Don *Gullermo de Suarez*, Governor of *Cadix*. The Fellow I employed on this Message was a Servant in whom I reposed great Confidence, and the only one of my Family who knew the Motives of our precipitate Journey. In that Letter, I acquainted the Governor with my whole Story; desired he would secure my Daughter, who I supposed was at *Cadix*, with the two Gentlemen passing under the Names I have already told you, entertained at the House of such a foreign Merchant.

Don *Alphonso's* Hurt obliged us to stay near *Alcala* three Weeks. We hoped in much less Time the Return of the Servant with News from the Governor that our Fugitives were secured: but he proved a Traitor; we never saw him more. When Don *Alphonso* was able, we proceeded on our Journey, which was very fatiguing; for it is near one Hundred *Spanish* Leagues from *Seguenga* to *Cadix*. When we arrived at the Town, I addressed myself to the Governor, he denied having received my Letter. On my Complaint, and requiring some Soldiers to search Mr *Benner's* House, he answered, that the *English* Merchant I mentioned, was a Man of a Probity to command Respect, did not Policy oblige the Court of *Spain* to have a particular Regard for and be very cautious

cautious of giving disgust to any of his Nation. That he would send to desire the Favour of speaking to him.

Upon receiving the Governors Message, the Merchant immediately came to pay him his Respects. Don *Gullermo* told him the Subject of our Complaint: He answered without Emotion that two Gentlemen of those Names had been at his House, recommended to him by an *English* Nobleman, who was returned to *England*; that they and their Servants had stay'd with him some Time; that about seven Weeks before the then Day, two young Gentlemen joined them: And about a Month past a Footman in such a Livery (describing mine) came and delivered to one of the young Gentlemen a Letter which occasioned (being handed round among themselves) a great Consternation. That one of his Guests asked him if he knew of any Ship which would immediately part from *Spain*, no matter to what Part of the World bound? that he answered the Advice-Boat for *la Vera Cruz* only waited for a Wind, and if it presented fair would set sail the next Day; upon which Answer that he was desired to take a Passage for them and their Servants; to order their Baggage on Board, and the Captain to lay in sufficient fresh Provisions, putting into his Hands an hundred Pistoles. That he did as he was desired.

desired. That his Guests took Leave of him, went the next Day on Board, and the following sailed with a fair Wind. That one of the Gentlemen had constrained him to accept the Ring he then had on his Finger of the Value of two Thousand Pieces of Eight, and that he was entirely a Stranger to every one of them, tho he had Reason, from their Behaviour, the Jewels he saw and and other Particulars, to believe them Persons of Quality.

We returned our Thanks to the Merchant for the ingenious Account he had given us, and took Leave of him and the Governor. As soon as we were at our Lodgings, Don *Alphonso* told me, he had taken his Party, which was to pursue the Ravisher, in whatever Part of the World he should take Shelter; and added; if you will accompany me, the Justice of our Cause will compensate for the Difference of Age; and we two, you will find sufficient to revenge the Injuries done us (you in particular, by robbing you of both your Children) by those two Brothers, as well in Baseness, as in Blood. If you decline accompanying me, tho' I am less wronged, I will singly pursue, and attack both. In a Word, we resolved upon following them; and having gotten Letters of Credit to every Port and principal City of *America*, that we might meet with

with no Disappointment in the Pursuit of our Design, we waited till the Fleet was ready to sail, which brought us to *la Vera Cruz*, where we got Information, that the Persons we described had purchased Mules, on their Arrival in the Advice-Boat, and set forward for *Mexico*, where we hope to shower on them that Vengeance, which their respective Crimes merit.

We consoled with the old Gentleman. Tho' we inwardly excused the two Brothers and the young Lady, we did not think it proper, before *Alphonso*, to say any thing in Extenuation of what they looked upon heinous Crimes.

## C H A P. V.

*Which is in the Reader's Option to pass by, or peruse.*

ORDERS being given, that every Thing should be in Readiness for continuing our Journey, the next Day, and the two Gentlemen retired to their Chambers, Don *Rodrigo* said, I will acquaint you with a Part of the Story, to which the old Gentleman is a Stranger.

I happened to be at *la Vera Cruz*, when the Advice-Boat arrived; and going on board, saw the Persons whom my two Guests pursue. I was taken with the Air and Behaviour of the two Gentlemen, and Beauty of one of the Youths. Asking the Captain, if those Passengers had brought any considerable Cargoes; and he answering, that they had Nothing on board but their Baggage, I was curious to know their Characters; for no body come to this Part of the World, if not employed in Traffic, or by the Government. To this End I made them an Offer of my Friend's House (of which I could dispose) telling them, they would find but very poor Accommodations in the Town, a Truth they would have experienced, had they refused my Offer.

To make short, they, with great Complaisance, accepted it. I procured them Mules, and accompanied them on their Way to *Mexico*, as far as this Town, where I prevailed with them to rest some Days (and with Persuasions) glad of having such agreeable Company at my House. I kept them with me a Month, in which Time I had gained their Confidence; and, on my expressing one Day a Desire to know what could have driven Persons, who seemed to me of Distinction, and visibly had no Business, to a Part of the World, which no-  
body

body visited but with a View of Lucre, Don *Lopez* told me their Story, which agreeing with what you heard from Count *Henares*, with Regard to the Friendship between the Count's Son and himself; I shall pass by, and what other Circumstances the old Gentleman's Narrative has made needless to mention, and give you in few Words the Character of Don *Henares*, as I had it from Don *Lopez*.

He was well made, tall, strong and active; very passionate, somewhat quarrelsome, and had more Courage than Discretion. He affected a particular Openness; and thought it was inconsistent with the Character of a Man of Honour to conceal his real Sentiments, and with that of a Man of Sense, to suffer any Constraint, by the Impertinence or Folly of others, on the Score of what the World calls, Good Breeding.

This Cynical Way of Thinking made him, without Reserve, give his Opinion of, and censure, even his nearest Relations, and best Friends.

As there are few who care to be told their Defects, especially in Public, and, as every one expects a Return of Complaisance for that he shows to others, he drew on himself many Quarrels, and the Ill-will of a Number of People. I have known him, said *Lopez*, tell a Gentleman, who read some Verses

Verſes of his own Compoſing, of which he had no ſmall Opinion (and where is the Author, who has not a Sort of paternal Fondneſs for his own Productions?) that he would ſhew more good Senſe in ſmothering his Work, than he had ſhewn Wit in the Writing it; nay, that it would be a Piece of good Nature done to himſelf and his Acquaintance, as his Poetry made him laughed at, and tired them.

I muſt acknowledge, his plain Dealing was of Service to me, continued Lopez, as I really loved him with the Affection of a Brother, I feared his Cenſure; was always on my Guard, both in my Words and Actions, when in his Company, and as we were ſeldom aſunder, it gave me a Habit of Conſidering thoroughly, before I ſpoke or acted. I was ſure he would not ſpare me; and I believed what he uſed to ſay, when he would excuſe his being ſometimes too ſevere in his Reprehenſions, that he only ſaid what others, who had leſs Regard for me, would think; and told me, to my Face, for my Advantage, what they would ſay to their Acquaintance behind my Back, to make me ridiculous, and to divert themſelves at the Expence of my Character.

When Don *Antonio*, proceeded *Lopez* (being come to that Part of his Story) brought with him my Friend, Don *Hena-*



res; his, and my Surprise was equal. I came, said *Henares*, to his Principal, with a Design to fight your Quarrel; but shall, I believe, return without drawing my Sword. How, said *Antonio*, is the Man, who piques himself me his Sincerity, a modern Friend, desert me in the Time of Necessity? Does this correspond with the Character of a brave Man? Does this agree with that of a Man of Honour? Or does it speak the Gentleman?

Does it, replied Don *Henares*, agree with any of these Characters to insist on my Attacking the Life of a Friend, in the Defence of which, I would sacrifice my own.

Said Don *Ramiro*, our Business here is not to dispute with Tongues, but Swords; and stripping to his Shirt, proceeded; I have brought with me a Man of Honour and Courage, who did not come to be an idle Spectator, he has espoused, and will maintain my Cause. Don *Lopez* scorns, under the Cloak of a pretended Friendship, to cover a real Baseness. As for you, *Henares*, if I return alive out of this Field, I will let the World know your Pusillanimity, if you do not maintain the Opinion they now have of you, as a gallant Gentleman. On such Occasions as these, no Friendship will be allowed an Excuse among Men of Honour.

*Henares,*

*Henares*, nettled at these Reproaches from either Side, address'd himself to me in these Words: Brother, so he often call'd me, join me, and let us convince these two unreasonable Men, how dangerous it is to doubt the Courage of a Gentleman. Second me, and I will soon give them Proof, that Don *Henares* does not want Courage. I replied, that I came with Design to assist Don *Ramiro* with my Sword, and could not in Honour turn it against him, any more than draw it upon himself, whom I little thought of meeting in the Field. I hope he won't exact of me Impossibilities; for Nothing is more so, than for me to attack you as an Enemy:

*Ramiro* said, Don *Henares*, you have insulted me in a Manner unpardonable. I, not *Antonio*, am the Man against whom you must defend yourself. Saying this, he threw off his Cloaths, and drew. *Ramiro* answered, I came to fight *Antonio*, who challenged me; do you two Talkers look on; and, since they have had the Trouble of coming into the Field, said he to *Antonio*, let the Survivor of us reward their Bravery with a Present of a Distaff to each, which better becomes the Hand of a Woman, than does a Sword; for, however Masculine they outwardly appear, 'tis evident they have Female Hearts.

Enough, enough *Ramiro*, cried Don *Henares*, the Laws of Honour are cruel, which exact what is unjust. Forgive me, dear *Lopez*; I am constrained to treat you as an Enemy; but, *Ramiro*, if my Friend falls by my Hand, you shall not long survive him.

*Antonio* and *Ramiro* engaged, and Don *Henares* came upon me; I defended myself, but would not return a Thrust. What, said *Henares*, do you dally with me? We must forget our Friendship; wherefore don't treat me with Contempt. I told him, that it was astonishing he could be wrought upon by the Reproaches of two ungrateful Men, to banish the Remembrance of our Friendship. My Honour, replied he, is dearer to me, than, I won't say my own, but even the Life of Don *Lopez* — I still battered and retired — What, said he, are you afraid, *Lopez*? I answered, not to die, but to wound you. No more of this Ceremony, said he, do your worst, and don't lessen the Opinion I have always had of your Courage. That, replied I, shall always be exerted in your Defence, but not against you. I find then, cried *Henares*, you think me too despicable an Enemy; I am therefore no more your Friend. Saying this, he wounded me in the Arm, himself mortally in the Thigh upon my Sword, and falling, said; Heaven forgive my Sins! dear Friend pray for my Soul;

---

Soul; which was all he had Time to say before he expired. I ran to lift him up, but finding him dead, and seeing my Principal on the Ground under his Enemy, I flew to his Assistance.

Count *Xeres* said Don *Rodrigo* related the Sequel of this unhappy Affair, I therefore go on to what he could not know. My Brother, continued Don *Lopez*, found Means to corrupt the Commander of the Party which was ordered to escorte me, and for 1000 Pistoles, immediately paid him, he suffered me to be rescued, by taking to Flight when my Brother and his Friends came upon him. His Men seeing their Officer quit the Field, did not think it became them to shew more Courage than their Superior, but followed his Example with some Precipitation. We heard he was tryed for my Escape; but he came off, by imputing it to the Number that attacked him, and which he made three Times those he commanded. His Men had more Manners than to contradict him, possibly their Fear might make them think my Brother's Party as great as the Officer reported; may be their Shame might make them connive at his Excuse, or he bought their Assent with part of the Money received to let me escape.

My Brother who had fresh Horses ready upon the Road, having thanked and taken Leave of our Friends, told me had written to an intimate Acquaintance at Court to procure a Pardon for us both; that he designed for *Cales*; that in Case the King could not be prevailed upon, we might quit *Spain*. We rode Day and Night till we got thither, where we met, and made an Acquaintance with an *English* Nobleman who had been to visit the Court of *Madrid*. We entrusted him with the Knowledge of our Circumstances, and he recommended us to a Merchant of his Nation, into whose House we were received. Our Friend at Court flattering us in his Letters with Hopes of procuring a Pardon, we staid at *Cales* (but seldom appeared) till the Arrival of *Fu-tella* to whom my Brother had often written by a trusty Servant still with us.

*Fuletta* had been but few Days at *Cales*, before one of Count *Xeres's* Men arrived. He enquired for the Master of the House, and told him that he had an Affair of Moment to communicate to my Brother and me; calling us by our borrowed Names. We ordered him into a Room: he there acquainted us that our Retreat was discovered; and gave my Brother the Letter he was to have carried to the Governor; enquired for his young Lady, advised our making off  
with

with all Expedition, and begged we would take him with us. Here said Don *Rodrigo*, Count *Xeres* has acquainted you with the remaining Part. These Gentlemen and the Lady are at *Mexico*, while their Friends sollicit their Pardon.

: Don *Diego* has often pressed *Juletta* to consent to their Marriage; but she answers that without her Father's Approbation she never will give her Hand; that her Obedience she prefers to her Happiness; that she will be the Wife of Don *Diego* or never have a Husband; that she will follow him to any Part of the World and let who will censure her Conduct, while she is conscious of her own Virtue, she shall despise the Malice of Detractors.

I keep a Correspondence with them, by Letter, and shall send an Express to acquaint the unfortunate Gentlemen with what I have learned, that they may be on their Guard. *Juletta* is safe from the Effects of their Resentment, as she retired to a Convent on their Arrival in *Mexico*.

I would have you spend what Time you can on the Road, and as you will have a House ready for your Reception, invite thither the two Gentlemen; you may by having them under your Roof possibly prevent Mischief, and be instrumental in effecting a Reconciliation. I will now, lest I

should forget it, give you an Address to Don *Diego*. This he instantly wrote, and putting it into my Hands desired I would exert myself in the Service of those Cavaliers if I had Opportunity to render them any, as he had conceived a Friendship for them and bore a Share in their Misfortunes.

The next Morning by Day-break he sent them an Express, in which he mentioned me as a Person devoted to their Interest from a Principle of Humanity.

The next Day when we took our Leaves of the hospitable *Rodrigo*, the Count pressed his accepting a large Diamond he wore on his Finger: but he begged to be excused in so handsome a Manner, that the other could not with Civility longer insist upon it.

## C H A P. VI.

*Containing an Account of an unexpected and uncommon Entertainment in the Way to Mexico.*

WE had travelled about four Leagues, when one of our Muletiers asked us if we intended to refresh ourselves and our Beasts before we reached *Rinconada*, where  
we

we were to lie that Night ; that if we did, it must be near hand or no where.

We agreed to dine, and repose ourselves 'till the intense heat of the Sun, very irksome to us, should be somewhat abated. The Fellow hearing what we concluded upon, led us out of the Way to a Place thick set with Coaker-Trees, which kept of the Rays of the Sun, by the Intermixture of their Leaves and allowed us all the Advantage of a refreshing Air.

These grow sixty or some eighty Foot high, have no Branches, their Bodies are as strait as Pines ; their Tops only, being furnished with Leaves fifteen or sixteen Foot long. They bear a large Nut, which you may cut like the Pith of Wood, and come at the Liquor within contained, called *Milk* ; each Nut holding, according to its Size, a Quart two Quarts of this delicious and refreshing Beverage. The gloominess and coolness of this Place, the natural green Canopy it spread over our Heads, and the Whistling of a gentle Breeze, which seemed to wanton in the Leaves ; the Silence which reigned here, interrupted with the Whispering of the Zephyrs only, and the Murmuring of a little Brook gliding through this delightful Place, gave us inexpressible Pleasure, and put me in Mind of the Descriptions I had read of enchanted Groves.



But how great was our Surprize, when on a sudden in this solitary Place, our Ears were saluted with a Concert of vocal and instrumental Musick, which spoke Judgment in Harinony, and Excellency of Voise in the Performers. Tho' we saw no Body, we did not imagine we were endebted to aerial Beings for our Entertainment, to which, staying our Mules, we listened with equal Pleasure and Attention. When the Musick ceased, we bid the Muletiers proceed.

They led us to a Thicket on the Left, about one Hundred Paces from us. From this Thicket, the only one we had observed from our coming into the Grove, it being clear from Shrubs, the Musick seemed to proceed. Here, Gentlemen, said one of the Muletiers, you will find a *Venta*, \* where you will be handsomely regaled by the Master; but I must acquaint you, that he is an Innkeeper of a very different Character from all others. He will furnish you whatever is wanting for yourselves or Mules; entertain you with Musick, fine Wines, and refreshing cool Liquors; but if you offer to pay him a Real, † he will resent it as the highest Affront.

Prithee, said the Count, how does he support the Expence? Nay, replied the Muletier; let him look to that. I play an excellent Knife, and am little curious, if my

\* *Spanish* for an Inn. † About Sixpence *English*.

my Teeth have but Employment enough to prevent Reproaches from my Belly, I thank Providence, and enquire no farther.

The Muletier alighting, desired we would also quit our Mules. We did so, and Don *Alphonso* asked where the Inn was, for he saw no Appearance of a House; you will soon see it, replied the Fellow. We followed him; and passing the Thicket, discovered three large Tents. At the Entrance of that in the Middle stood Don *Rodrigo* to receive us. When we parted from his House, he took Horse; and by another Road, got thither long before us. He had the Day before ordered these Tents to be set up; sent thither the Musick and every Thing necessary to regale us with a Magnificence which shewed more the liberal Spirit of a Prince than of a Merchant.

That, cried the Muletier, is the Inn-keeper pointing to *Rodrigo*, who came forward to receive us. Cavaliers, said he: I have decoyed you three Quarters of a Mile out of your Way; but when I have told you my Reason for having hindered your Journey, I hope you will forgive me, as you will find, that at the same Time I indulged to myself in a longer Enjoyment of your agreeable Conversation, I also consulted your Ease.

Don *Alphonso* answered that he enhanced a Debt which was already so great, they

should never be able to pay it, therefore he must, as with Bankrupts, take all they could offer; their Acknowledgments.

You should not Sir call the Man a Bankrupt, replied Don *Rodrigo*, who pays even more than is required. Whatever you please to say you are indebted to me is over-paid with Interest, if you allow a Tender of my Service acceptable. Saying this, he led us into the Tent, hung with a rich Crimson *Genoa* Damask; being seated, a Servant brought in a Jarr of Water so very cool, that it made the Teeth chatter, and a Flask of St *Martin's* Wine. When we had each of us drunk a Glas of these mixed; Don *Rodrigo* addressed himself to his Guests in the following Manner.

Cavaliers, you have no Place in which you could have commodiously refreshed yourselves before you had reached *Rinconada*, where you must have lain. That Place affords you great choice of Provisions, and the finest Water in the World, but then at Night, Passengers are attacked with such Swarms of Mosquitoes, they cannot have one Moment's Rest. Their buzzing is alone sufficiently vexatious to a fatigued and sleepy Traveller, but their Stings are almost intolerable, and have been attended with dangerous Fevers.

To prevent these Inconveniencies, I acknowledge that I entered into a Plot with your Muletiers, to Decoy you hither, where if you will do me the Favour to repose your selves this Night, you will sleep without Molestation. I will endeavour to make the Time as little heavy upon your Hands 'till you go to Rest as possible, by an Entertainment new to the Count and to Don *Alphonso*. If in the Morning you set out by break of Day, you will have passed *Rinconada* before the great Heat comes on, and refreshing your selves at *Guataluca*, you may in good Time reach the Town where you must lie.

The Count thanked Don *Rodrigo*, in handsome Terms, for his Concern, and the Trouble he took upon himself to consult their Ease. In little Time Dinner was served in, which consisted of twenty-two Dishes, and we were entertained, while at Table, with Musick, which ceased not till we arose. Don *Rodrigo* then led us to a second Tent, that the Servants might clear the Table. This Tent was hung with a thick yellow Damask embroidered with running Spriggs of Silver.

Being seated we heard a Trumpet. I promised you said *Rodrigo* an Entertainment new to these Gentlemen, Strangers to *America*: this Trumpet is a Signal that my Performers

formers are ready, and expect the Honour of your Presence. He then got up, and we followed him to a Bank his Slaves had made for our sitting upon, covered with a Carpet. A Table was placed before it with several Sorts of Wine, Chrystal Bottles of cool Water, and great Variety of Sweetmeats, wet and dry on Silver Salvers, and in Basons gilt. As soon as we were placed, a Sett of *Indian* Dancers began after the Manner of their Nation to entertain us with an Agility, Exactness of Time and Measure, which agreeably surprized. When they withdrew, a Sett of *Indian* Tumblers, not less astonishing, performed such Feats of Activity, as I never saw equaled by any, the most famous *Europeans*. These made Way to a Company representing *Indian* Warriors, who ranged themselves in two Lines, and began a Sort of *Pyrrhic* Dance, strikeing their Spears on their Targets. After this, which was a Sort of Prelude, they again divided and engaged in Battle, the Musick changing to a warlike Stile. Several Prisoners were taken, several supposed to be slain, on either Side, and at length, one Party being entirely routed and driven out of the imaginary Field of Battle, the Captives were bound and delivered for Victims to Priests who with Women joined in the Dance and

and a triumphal One, with Songs of Joy for the Victory, concluded the Entertainment.

The two Dons expressed their Satisfaction, as much by their Countenances, as Words. Chocolate was brought us, and we kept our Seat in the Cool, till the Care of our Health, by the Dew beginning to fall, made us withdraw to the Tent, where we had dined. Cards were brought, and we diverted ourselves, 'till a Servant told *Rodrigo*, that Supper was served. He opened the back Part of the Tent, and we found it afforded us a Passage to the other, which had been removed, that we might not be exposed to the Dew.

We passed the Evening, till it was Time to withdraw to Rest, very agreeably; and then retired to the third Tent, where we found Hammocks of fine Cotton slung, in which we slept comfortably, till Dawn of Day, when we arose: and having drunk Chocolate for Breakfast, taking our Leave of the generous Merchant, pursued our Journey, without meeting or seeing any Thing worthy Remark, and lay the second Night after at *Segura de la Frontera*, inhabited by *Spaniards* and *Indians*, to the Number of about a thousand.

This Town, as the Name shews, was built for a Security to the Frontiers, and to protect such *Spaniards*, as travelled from

*St John de Ulbua* to *Mexico*, against the *Cusbuacan* and *Tepeacac* Indians, Friends and Allies of the *Mexicans*, but cruel Enemies to the *Spaniards*, whom they greatly annoyed. These were the People, who took twelve of *Cortez's* Men, sacrificed them to their Idols, and feasted on their Flesh. When *Cortez* had reduced them to the Obedience of the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, King of *Spain*, he built this Town.

Perceiving my two Companions somewhat fatigued with the Journey and the Heat, I proposed the reposing our selves for a Day, as I had a Mind to allow the two Brothers, at *Mexico*, as much Time as possible, to take their Measures on the Advice sent them by *Rodrigo*. This View made me order the Muletiers, when we pursued our Journey, to decline from the direct Road, and take that of *Tlaxcallan*, lying North-westward of the Way we should have gone. The Conquest of this prodigious Country of *Mexico*, was chiefly owing to the Friendship and Assistance given to *Hernando Cortez* by the People of this Province, a warlike Nation.

In our Way to that Town, we passed by some Heaps of Stone and Crosses, erected near the Ruins of an *Indian* Tower. At this Place, said a Muletier, *Hernando Cortez* entered into a League with the Nation of the *Tlaxcallans*, or *Tlaxcaletas*, after having, with  
only

only four hundred *Spaniards*, and six hundred auxiliary *Indians* of *Zempoallan* and *Zacotlan*, fought their Army, consisting of one hundred and fifty Thousand effective Men several Days; and as often defeated them with prodigious Slaughter, without suffering the Loss of one *Spaniard*; in Memory of which, these Heaps of Stone and these Crosses were by him set up.

The Town of *Tlaxcallan* is large, the Houses built of Stone, and the Inhabitants numerous. Leaving this Town, we came to the City called, *La Puebla de los Angeles*, within twenty Leagues of *Mexico*. The Count being too much indisposed to proceed on his Journey, we staid here eight Days, before he thought himself thoroughly recovered, which gave me sufficient Leisure to visit the City. It is situated in a pleasant Valley, about ten Leagues distant from a very high Mountain; contains about ten Thousand Inhabitants; a fine Cathedral; a Convent of *Dominicans*, one of *Franciscans*, another of *Augustines*, a fourth of *Mercenarians*, a fifth of bare-footed *Carmelites*, a sixth of *Jesuits*, and four Monastries for Women.

The next Town, worthy of Note, we arrived at, was *Guacocingo*, chiefly inhabited by *Indians*. This was the last Town we were to lie at, *Mexico* being the next; to which we went over the Side of the Mountain I mentioned,



tioned, at ten Leagues distant from *La Puebla de los Angeles*. This Mountain exceeds any of the *Alps*, for Height and Cold; and wears a constant Cap of Snow. From the highest Part of our Ascent, which was not near to the Summit, we descryed the City of *Mexico*, and the Lake, appearing but at a small Distance, though near three Leagues and a half from the Foot of the Mountain, situated in a Plain. We reached it in the Evening; and going directly to my Correspondent's House, were hospitably received, and lodged that Night. The next Day, the two Gentlemen having accepted the Invitation I had made them to be my Guests, my Friend conducted us to the House he had taken for me.

As several Missionaries returned from *Mexico*, have given an ample and just Description of that Kingdom in general, and of the Metropolis, which bears the same Name, in particular, it prevents my troubling you with what possibly you have already read, however may read in Print; I shall therefore, waving every Thing which regards that Kingdom or City, attend only to the Thread of my Story.

The very Day I took Possession of my House, when my Guests retired to sleep, on Account of the *Siesta*, \* I went, directed by the

\* *Siesta*, is the Time of Day, when the Heat is most intent.

the Address Don *Rodrigo* had given me, and found Don *Diego* and Don *Lopez*.

They seemed very gratefully to resent the friendly Advice sent them by Express from their Friend at *Kalappa*; but were resolved to wait the Event. Don *Lopez* said, I cannot but have Compassion for Count *Xeres*, he having lost a Son, of whom he was extremely fond though his pursuing my Life with a Rage implacable, is altogether unjust; as I really hazarded my own, to save his, and suffered in his Death, for I loved him with an unfeigned Affection. I know the Design which has pushed him upon so long and hazardous a Voyage. The old Gentlemen is brave; and, notwithstanding the Disparity of Years, I am satisfied, will call me into the Field, where I shall endeavour as much to guard his, as I did his Son's, or will my own Life. My Brother expects the same Compliment from his Rival, but has not the same Reason to spare him; wherefore, I fear he has travelled some thousand Leagues for what he might have found in Peace at home, I mean his Death.

I made a Tender of my Service, if I could be happy enough any way to be of Use to them. They thanked me very civilly, and answered, that it was possible they might be troublesome to me.

After

After a Visit of about half an Hour, I took my Leave. The Day following the Count and his Companion went out early, to take a View of the Town, but left Word, that they would not have me expect them at Dinner, as it was not improbable, their Curiosity might keep them longer abroad, than they designed.

I heard nothing of them, 'till pretty near the Close of the Evening, when a Coach stopped at my Door, with the Count and his Friend, in Appearance, dead. The former desired a Surgeon might be sent for. One luckily lived next Door to me; he came, and immediately visiting the Body, found two large Wounds, which, he said, were not mortal. He stanch'd the Blood with stip-ticks, and we put the Patient into a warm Bed, in which he recovered from the Swoon, his great Effusion had caused, but appeared senseless.

A Physician and two Nurses were sent for, and all possible Care taken to save him. I, who knew their Errand, and was not at a Loss to guess the Author of his Misfortune, immediately went to the House of Don Diego and Don Lopez.

The Servant who opened the Door, told me, they were at the Convent of the *Dominicans*. I there found, and let them know the Surgeon had Hopes of Don *Alonso's* Life,

Life, whom they had left for dead. They seemed to receive my News with an Air of Indifference. That obstinate old Man, cried Don *Diego*, if he recovers, will, I fear, not be warned by his present Misfortune. When I heard from *Xalappa*, his and the Count's Arrival, I was in my self satisfied, he came to seek his Death. They, as I foresaw, sent my Brother and self a Challenge; we went to the Place appointed; where, on our first Appearance, Don *Alphonso* attacked me, and the Count, my Brother, without giving him Leave to justify him self, or even speaking a single Word to him. *Lopez* defended him self, and was as cautious of wounding the Count, as he was careful to preserve his own Life.

I soon made *Alphonso* measure his Length on the Ground, and immediately ran to disengage my Brother, who had often Opportunity to have put an End to the Count's Rage with his Life.

The old Gentleman, seeing me come up, said, the Justice of my Cause will ballance the Odds of two to one. Alas, Sir, said I, you have, in us, whom you look upon as Enemies, two that admire your Virtues; esteem, and respect your Person; and far from seeking your Life, are ready to defend it at the Hazard of their own. Think not, we expect any Submission from you. We are

are satisfied; Men of your Bravery may die, but are not to be conquered. Let me conjure you to pardon my Brother a Misfortune, he endeavoured to avoid, and which as sensibly affects him, as yourself.

As to me, I have always honoured you as a Parent; and shall ever pay you the same Deference. It is true, your Daughter, to keep the Faith she had plighted; and to avoid a Match, to which she was averse, took Shelter with me, to whom you had designed her. I have been a just Guardian of her Honour; and she is so tender of breaking in upon the Duty due to you as a Parent, that she has vowed never to give me her Hand, without I can obtain your Consent. The Count, who listened to me with Attention, answered, Generous Cavaliers, your saying, I am not to be conquered, makes me acknowledge your Conquest; and that I owe my Life to you, since you did not think of compelling me to ask it, a Meanness no Man of Honour could submit to.

On this, he threw away his Sword, and added; I will believe Don *Lopez* guiltless, and attribute the Loss of my Son to our Misfortune. He then embraced us both, and bid us immediately consult our Safety; that we should soon hear from him; and calling the Servants who were waiting at his Coach, they carried off Don *Alphonso*, and  
we

we took Sanctuary with the good Fathers of this Convent.

The next Day both the Physician and Surgeon gave Hopes of *Alphonso's* Recovery; but desired he might not be spoken to, or suffered to speak; for this Reason; the Count and I forbore our Visits for some Days; his Nurses told us, that he very seldom opened his Mouth.

The Count daily visited the two Brothers and his Daughter, whom he forgave the Step she had taken, in leaving his House; however he found himself greatly embarrassed between Don *Diego* and Don *Alphonso*; they had both his Promise, and the latter had made dangerous Voyage to obtain *Julietta*, or revenge the Affront done the Count and his Family, if he could not with Honour marry her, or she had disposed of her self.

I found him to be a Man of strict Honour; and it was this, which gave him an unspeakable Perplexity. He often advised with me what Course he could take, to avoid Reproach. I was of Opinion, that he ought to make good his Promise first given to Don *Diego*, as that to Don *Alphonso* was; I thought, conditional; namely, if the former and his Brother were guilty of what he found them both innocent.

Don *Alphonso* put an End to his Uneasiness on this Head. He sent for the Count and me the

the sixth Day after his Misfortune. We went, and excused our not having constantly been with him, alleging the Injunction of the Physician and Surgeon. The former, who was present, said, he thought the Gentleman out of Danger; but, however, desired he would discourse as little as possible. The Patient asked the Physician, when he thought he might be able to unboosome himself? who desired he would have Patience four Days longer.

I will, replied the wounded Gentleman; in the Interim, Count, continued he, do me the Favour to tell Don *Diego*, that I resign him *Juletta*; am no longer his Enemy; desire he will favour me with a Visit, at the Time the Doctor will allow me to open my Mouth, and that, in pursuing his Rum, such Good can the Almighty produce out of Evil, I hope, I have found my eternal Happiness. For his Sake I will take all possible Care of my Health; and, as that may be endangered by much Talk, I say no more.

The Count, overjoyed with this Declaration, immediately went to Don *Diego*'s, delivered him *Alphonso*'s Message, and at the same Time consented to his marrying *Juletta*, whom he sent for from the Monastery, and carryed with him to my House; though he gave strict Orders, that none should acquaint Don *Alphonso* with her being under the same

Roof

Roof with him; as he apprehended it might cause an Emotion prejudicial to his Health.

---

## C H A P. VII.

*Evil productive of Good, or the Devil makes a Saint.*

**D**ON *Diego* with his Brother came the Day appointed; the Count and I waited on them to Don *Alphonso's* Chamber, who, in a fair Way of Recovery, was sitting up in his Bed, with his Night-Gown on him. As soon as he perceived, he addressed himself to his late Adversary in Words to this Effect.

Forgive a true Penitent, brave *Diego*, for having pursued your Life with a Revenge implacable. I resign you *Fuletta*, of whom I would have unjustly robbed you. I am no more the Man I was, and am thoroughly sensible, that the false Notions, Men entertain of Honour, is a Diabolical Illusion; that there is no being a Man of real true Honour, but in the Practice of those Duties which Religion teaches, diametrically contrary to the deceitful Notions the World entertains, and which make many a brave Man offer him-

G

self



self up a Martyr to the Devil: sacrificing Body and Soul, to gain the empty Applause of thoughtless Ideots. We profess ourselves Christians, and yet glory in Revenge — Monstruous Absurdity! We acknowledge future Retributions from Eternal Mercy and Justice, yet live, as if we had no Need of the one, and defyed the other.

Don *Diego*, your Sword, by giving me a near View of Eternity, has opened my Eyes to myself, and the World; the one a Bubble of a Moment's Duration, actuated by tormenting Passions, exposed to numberless Dangers and Temptations; the other, incapable of affording Happiness; its false Pleasures ever attended with the Bitterness of Repentance; its Respects with designing Flattery; its Honours and Riches with Uncertainty. wherefore I shall husband the latter Part of Life, the Stage I am now in, by employing my Days in Acts of Humiliation and sincere Penitence; and, abandoning all other Views, keep my Eyes fixed on that of conciliating my Creator, and of obtaining a Happiness beyond the Power of Time and Vicissitudes.

My Estates I leave, as 'tis just, to my next Heir at Law; and am inflexibly resolved to enter into Religion: when I quit this Bed, I will retire into a Convent. I wish you all a prosperous Voyage to *Europe*, which I am determined never more to visit.

Don

Don *Diego*, may you be as happy with *Fuletta*, as you yourself can wish. May she; you, my Friend the Count; your Brother, and my generous Host, live honoured for your Virtues: and may your Lives be such, that you may see the Day of your Dissolution with a Joy, arising from certain Hopes of its being the Guide to conduct you to an endless Rest. As now I find myself somewhat weak, I shall take the Liberty to desire you will leave me to my Repose.

In three Weeks Time after this, Don *Alphonso* was entirely recovered, though feeble. The Day was fixed for *Fuletta's* Marriage, and it was performed with great Magnificence. The next after, my Guest, *Alphonso*, sent for the Superior of the *Dominicans*, and took of me ten Thousand Crowns on Bills of Exchange to *Spain*. He had Letters of Credit, and might have taken much larger Sums elsewhere; but I, having sold most of my Merchandize, and wanting to return my Money to purchase more, requested the Favour of his Draught, on his saying he would take that Sum.

Eight Thousand Crowns he presented to the Convent of *Dominicans*; one Thousand he obliged me to accept; the other Thousand he distributed in Charity: and, taking his Leave of us, retired to those Fathers, where he lived a Recluse in his Chamber, entirely se-

questred from the World, an Example of true Christian Piety, seven Years, and died with the Calmness, and indeed the Reputation of a Saint.

The Count, his Daughter, and the two Brothers had a prosperous Voyage to *Spain*, from whence, by the Return of the *Flota*, the old Gentleman sent me and Don *Rodrigo* a Present of Oyles. I disposed of my Part for two Thousand Pieces of Eight, *Rodrigo's* was worth as much.

As my Voyage to *Mexico* was not for an Airing, I enquired into every Thing which regarded the Inland Trade, not to be idle, while I expected Goods from *Europe*, but to improve my Stock, in as short a Time as possible, and be able to return Home.

I observed many *Indians* traded to the City with Requas of Mules laden with Wax, Cotton, Silk, Honey, Sugar, and Cochine. One of these *Indian* Pedlars had bought of me several Sorts of *European* Goods, to the Amount of eight Thousand Pieces of Eight. With him I endeavoured to gain an Intimacy, which I found nothing difficult to effect.

One Day, discoursing with him upon the Inland Trade, he told me, that, if I would purchase Mules, and carry my Goods into the Country, I might gain about fifty *per Cent.* more than I could sell them for in the City,

City, and in trucking them for Hides, and the Productions of the different Provinces, I should find a considerable Profit on my Return to *Mexico*, if I had not rather send them to *Spain*, than dispose of them to the *Mexican* Merchants. This, however, continued he, is such a mean Way of Traffic, that no *Spaniard* will condescend to fall into it, and much less could he expect, I would think of it, who dealt so largely.

I considered with myself, that my Business was to get Money, and not to think any thing, which answered that View, below me; wherefore I asked him, if he would keep me Company, or procure such a Guide as I might trust.

He answered, that he was going, with what he had purchased of me and other Merchants, to *Guaxaca*, sixty Leagues distant from *Mexico*; that, if I would purchase Mules, he would be glad to wait on me; for his Stock would not answer the tenth Part of the Demand, which was then made in that City and its Neighbourhood.

I purchased twenty Mules, and set out with the honest *Indian*. I perceiv'd he had inform'd me right. I disposed of all my Goods by Way of Barter, as I found my Account in it; purchased some fine Horses, for the breeding of which, the Valley of *Guaxaca* is famous, and, lading my Hides and other Goods,

returned with a String of thirty Mules, having encreased my Requa, and ten Horses, which latter were immediately taken off my Hands, at thirty *per Cent.* Advantage.

My *Indian*, going farther into the Country, recommended to me some Muleteers, who proved careful industrious Servants. I was so pleased with my Profit, that I passed most of my Time bartering in the Country, with the Goods which I received from *Spain* every *Flota*, for those I sent thither. 'Tis true, the Merchants would, by Way of Derision, call me Pedlar and Muleteer; but that did me no Harm, and my Profits great Good. They shortned the Time of my Stay in *America* considerably. I was resolved, since I had made that long Voyage, to do my Business compleatly, I mean, raise a Fortune.

The third Journey I made to *Gua aca*, was with fourscore Mules laden with *European* Goods. I found my Account so well in turning Pedlar, I would part with Nothing in *Me ico*.

The Bishop, hearing I was arrived with Goods brought by the *Flota* to *la Vera Cruz*, sent for me, and I went to the Palace; his Lordship wanted a Quantity of Gold and Silver Galloons of the *French* Manufacture, if I had any, which I would warrant to be such. I had a large Quantity, and, fetching them, his Lordship bought of me to the Value of  
eight

eight hundred Crowns, for adorning the Altars.

I observed he examined my Face with as great Attention, as if he thought he had formerly known, and endeavoured to call me to mind. When he had chosen the Parcels wanted, he ordered his Steward to pay, and keep me not only to Dinner, but till the Company that dined with him were gone.

When the Steward told me his Lord's Orders, I began to think I had somewhere seen his Face, though I could not recall him to Mind, and fancied his Lordship's Memory, with Regard to his Knowledge of me, was less treacherous.

The Company being gone, I was introduced to the Bishop, who ordered me a Chair; made a Sign for the Steward to leave us, and bidding me sit down, said, *Senior Scipio*, I hope you are an honest Man than you were, when you robbed the Archbishop, and pillaged the strong Box of the honest Woollen-draper, *Balthazar Velazquez*, at Cordova. My Lord, said I, since you so well know the Crimes I have been guilty of, I don't question but you also know, I was pushed on to the Commission of them, and will give some Grains of Allowance to the Age I then was: not that I pretend, even to extenuate what I have sincerely repented, and have restored in

Charity to the Poor, as I could not make Restitution to the Persons injured.

I know, answered the Bishop, you were instigated, nay, in a manner forced to rob *Balthazar*, by his wicked, his profligate Son, *Gaspar*; but your carrying off the Archbishop's Pearls, &c. proceeded entirely from your own natural Propensity to Pilfering. If you have, as you say, repented and made Restitution, I don't question, but your Pardon is sealed in Heaven; and who dares presume to reflect on him, whom God takes to Mercy?

What, continued the Bishop, became of that Paricide, that superlative Villain, *Gaspar*?

My Lord, said I, 'twas reported, that, touched with Remorse, he became a *Carthusian* in *Seville*. If he still lives, I hope his Example of Piety has atoned for his former Crimes, which were less owing to a Depravity of Nature, than to bad Company; if he is dead, I hope his Repentance on Earth, signed his Passport to eternal Rest and Happiness.

You express yourself so much like a good Christian, replied the Bishop, that I can't doubt your having, as you say, repented the Follies of your Youth. *Gaspar*, thoroughly sensible of the Heinousness of his Crime, as you have truly heard, became a *Carthusian*; and thought of Nothing more upon Earth, than  
of

of effacing his Sins ; washing away the crimson Dye of his Iniquities, with the Tears of Repentance: Waters, which flowing from the Fountain of a contrite Heart, thro' the Conduits of Eyes, averted from all worldly Objects, are of the greatest Efficacy to cleanse us from all Pollution.

After three Years, his Superior, satisfied with his Conduct, commanded him to apply himself to the Study of Divinity, and the Father Preacher to assist him in that Study ; to which, *Gaspar* dedicated the Hours, not employed in Acts of Devotion, ten Years: At the End of this Space, he was elected Preacher, the Age of the other excusing him from the Fatigue which must be acknowledged great to a Man zealous for the Souls of his Hearers, when attained to a declining Age.

*Gaspar* had the good Fortune to compose Sermons which answered his only View, the Edification of his Auditors.

He had performed this Duty about seven Years, when there was a Necessity of sending one of the Fathers to the General of the Order at *Rome*. He was pitched upon, and a Lay-brother appointed for his Companion in the Journey.

The Superior gave him, in his Letter to the General, the Character he endeavoured



to merit of a good religious; and super-added that of an edifying Preacher.

The General reported him such to his Holiness, who would hear, and, hearing him, approved, nay extolled his Composition and Manner of Delivery. He was happy enough to gain not only the Esteem of the General, but even the Countenance of his Holiness, who did him the Honour of several private Audiences; commanded the Affair, which caused his Journey to *Rome*, to be dispatched with all possible Diligence, and conferred on him, with Command to leave his Convent and enter upon the Mission, the Bishoprick of *Guaxaca*, where he has the Pleasure to embrace Senior *Scipio*, and to beg he would forget the perilous and wicked Steps he had compelled that same *Scipio* to take; and moreover to thank him for the Salvation of his Soul, as he hoped through the Mercies of God and Mediation of his Redeemer, by having revealed to his Father, the unnatural Design upon that good Parent's Life: a Crime, which, though sincerely repented of, he cannot call to mind without Horror and Detestation of himself.

Saying this he tenderly embraced me, and Tears of Joy trickled down my Cheeks. I clasped him to my Bosom, and could pronounce no more than, Is it possible! Am I so happy as to see this glorious Change?

Having

HAVING recovered from my first Transports, I asked his Lordship after his Family; he told me, that my good old Master had lived to a great Age; that his Sister was married, very happily, to a wealthy Merchant, and that they enjoyed all his Father's Foraine, which he had renounced upon entering into Religion, being so entirely weaned from all worldly Desires; that he could not esteem himself, even now that he was in Obedience, once more entered into publick Life, other than a Steward for the Poor, to receive the Revenue of his See for their Use: excepting what was necessary in the Service of his Churches; his Mind being entirely fixed on Treasures that were neither perishable nor liable to Accidents.

After this, he asked me the History of my Life, from the Time he had seen me. I gave him an impartial Relation; he kept me to Supper, and would that Night admit no Visits.

When I took my Leave of his Lordship, he promised to do me what Service he was capable of. I found him extremely Just in the Performance of this Promise. by his Interest and Recommendation, as he was, and deserved to be revered in his Diocess for his Piety, Hospitality, Charity, Abstemiousness, and Affability, I engrossed almost all the Trade of the Province of *Guaxaca*.

You will easily guess the Profit which accrued to me from thence; as it contains three hundred and fifty Towns, not fewer Villages, and one hundred and sixty Monastries. all which, I, in a manner, solely supplied with *European* Goods. This obliged me to employ Factors in different Towns, and to keep four hundred Mules upon the Roads.

You may Gentlemen, knowing by the Map, that the great River *Alvarado* runs up to *Zapotecas* and *St Ildefonso*, which are not far from *Guaxaca*, and considering that Goods may by that Canal easily, and at smaller Expence, be transported from *St John de Ulbua* in the *North-Sea*, you may, I say, wonder why I was at the Expence of Land-carriage, which must necessarily be very great. But I am to inform you, that the *Dutch* Pirates infesting the *North-Seas*, often send Boats well manned up this River; on which, there is not any Fort, and render that Passage dangerous; besides, my Mules, which carried the Produce of the Country to Ship on Board the Fleet for *Spain*, must have come back without Lading.

At my Return from a third Journey to *Mexico*, I had news of the Arrival of the *Fleta*, on which I had a great Quantity of Oil, a Commodity so very dear at that Time, in the Inland Provinces, that nothing could  
have

have turned more to my Advantage then my, Factor at *Cadiz*, having shipped it on my Account, which he did, on observing that very little Oil was laden on board the Fleet.

I sent away Mules sufficient to bring it to *Mexico*, and, setting out in Post-haste, engrossed all the Oils imported, before the great Scarcity of it in the inland Provinces was known. This proved so profitable, as I set my own Price upon it, that I flattered myself I need stay but a Year or two more, to satiate my Ambition of being Master of a great Estate.

I had the Misfortune however to lose thirty thousand Pieces of Eight in the Return of that very Fleet, which being separated by a Storm, the Merchant-man, carrying my Effects, fell into the Hands of a *Dutch* Freebooter.

I looked upon this as a Judgment, as it was just the Sum, over and above the common Profit, I had extorted from the Provinces, taking Advantage of the Necessity they were in, by setting an exorbitant Price, on my Oil. This Reflection made me resolve, and I kept that Resolution, never more to prey upon the Wants of others.

I had all along made my Business my Diversion, and found no Fatigue in the most tiresome Journeys; so bent was I on pursuing and effecting the one and only Point in view.

My

My Industry was attended with a Blessing from Heaven, which I attribute to my religiously keeping a just Account with the Poor; to whose Relief I had, at the entering upon my Voyage, vowed one Tenth of all my Profits, and made no Defalcation for any Losses, which indeed were few and inconsiderable, the before-mentioned excepted.

On my Return from *St John de Ulhua*, or *la Vera Cruz*, I was sent for by the Vice-roy, who told me the Bishop of *Guaxaca* had, in the strongest Terms, and with the Character of a Man of great Probity recommended me to his Favour and Protection; that I might depend on both, where he could be of Service to me, as he had a great Regard for that pious and excellent Prelate. Adding, that he should be well pleased to see me often at the Palace, and hoped it might prove to my Interest. I returned my most humble Thanks, and gratefully acknowledged the Bishop's Goodness, in procuring me so powerful a Patron.

As I had hardly any other View than that of my Interest, I was very assiduous in paying my Court to the Vice-roy, who always received me with such publick Marks of Favour, that it caused both my Astonishment and the Envy of others, who looked down upon me with Contempt and Indignation; taking all Opportunities to insult  
and

and ridicule me. This his Highness observing, treated me with greater Marks of Distinction; and one Morning at his Levy, when there was a Crowd of Gentlemen, called and took me with him into his Clofet.

---

## CH A P. VIII.

*The Insolence of an Upstart. — The Reward of modest Bravery, in the Story of Don Casa-blanca.*

**S**ENIOR *Scipio*, said he, you must be sensible, that I came here rather for the Profits than for the Honour of my Post; indeed his Majesty gave it me, that I might repair the Damage my Father's Service to the Crown, by an expensive Ambassy, had done his Fortune.

You are experienced in Trade, and as it does not suit the Dignity of my Character, to meddle with Commerce, though I know a very great Profit is got by Traffick, in which I have had Thoughts of employing a round Sum, I must desire you to be my Agent, and manage for me. I am satisfied you will do every Thing as for your own Advantage. The good Bishop, who re-  
com

commended you, would not have given me the Character he has, did he not know it was what you really merited.

I told his Highness he might command me, and should find I would not give that right reverend Prelate cause to repent his good Opinion. I sincerely believe it, replied the Vice-Roy, let me see you To-morrow pretty early in the Morning.

I took my Leave of his Highness, who made me a Complement at the Closet-door, and coming into the Room, with a circular Bow to the Company, retired to his Chamber.

The Levy being dismissed, as I was going to the Stairs, a Gentleman cryed out, make Way for his Excellency Don *Scipio Caxero*. \* I turned to him, saying, Envy prey'd upon itself, and, with a scornful Smile, went directly to my Coach, which waited at the Palace Gate. My Servant had opened the Door, and I was stepping in, when the same Gentleman, seizing on my Arm, said, Senior *Bubonero*, † I want you to explain what you said to me. Do you think a Man of my Birth can envy such a Worm as thou art?

Really, Senior, said I, your Good-will or Envy are equally indifferent to me; and breaking from him, flung away pretty much nettled;

\* *Spanish* for a Pedlar.

† Also Pedlar.

netled; nay, so much, that if Reason, stepping in and checking my Resentment, had not held my Hand, I should have made him the Return his Compliment deserved.

I drove Home; my Gentleman followed and equired for me, before I had well digested his Insolence. The Sight of him put my Blood into a Ferment; however, I endeavoured to appear quite calm, and civilly asked him what Commands he had for me?

I am come, said he, to tell you that Senior *Scipio* is a an impertient *Gavacho*, \* and out of Charity, to counsel him to behave with more Modesty and Respect to Gentlemen of my Distinction, or he may feel their Resentment by the Hands of Servants, who are accustomed to the handling a Cudgel, the Instrument of Correction for such mean Wretches as he, who would dishonour the Gentleman that should condescend in Person to chastise his Impudence with his Sword.

Pray, Senior, said I, almost choaked with Rage, will your Condescension inform me to whom I owe the Obligation of this salutary Admonition?

It is, said he, Don *Carpio Henriquez Guillermo*, *Julian Pintero*, *de la Casa-blanca*, who has taken the Trouble to do you this Honour. Then, replied I, Don *Carpio, Henriquez*

\* Scoundrel.



*riquez Guillermo, Julian Pintero de la Casa-blanca* is himself a *Gavacho*. Saying this, taking him by the Collar, thrusting him out of my Door and throwing it to in his Face, were the Effects of one and the same Instant.

I went into my Counting-house, where a Book-keeper and four Clerks were constantly employed. The former, looking at me, asked, If I had met with any cross Accident to ruffle my Temper? I told him what had passed, and asked, If he knew this Spark who valued himself so much on his Distinction? The Book-keeper smiling answered, Yes, Sir, I believe most of the Inhabitants of *Mexico* have heard of him: He is certainly of a very ancient Family, for, if you trace his Genealogy back to the Fountain, you will find the first of his Ancestors not only the greatest Man upon Earth, but at one Time the most virtuous; that Virtue, however, was at length sullied by his Ambition.

Prithee, said I, who was this famous Pro-togenitor of the Family of *Casa-blanca*? 'Tis possible, said the Book-keeper, you may have heard of him under the Name of *Adam*, who, possessed all the Earth, Immortality and Innocence. by losing the last, through Ambition of knowing more than was permitted him, he forfeited the other two. But, said I, what were his more immediate Ancestors? What's his Fortune? What his Character?

His

His Grandfather, replied the other, was a Shoemaker in *Castile*, who, being but a Bungler in his Business consequently getting little to do, lifted himself for a Soldier. I knew him when I was a Youth; and in my Days never saw a more beautiful Figure of a Man. He was very tall and finely proportioned; had a graceful Air, and genteel Manner of Behaviour. What others acquire, by the Help of different Masters, was in him natural; his Face was of a fine Oval; his Countenance sweet, yet awful; his Nose of a just Proportion; his Forehead high and large; his Mouth small; his Teeth white; his Complexion rather too fine for a Man; his Eyes black and sparkling; his Hair of the same Colour, long thick and falling on his Shoulders in large Buckles; his Voice manly. To these Advantages of his Person he had a lively Wit, excellent Sense, an obliging Temper; was cool, sedate and extremely brave; of which he had often given Proof in the King's Troops against the Infidels in *Europe*. especially, at the Battle of *Lepanto*, where he distinguished himself in a particular Manner, by boarding a *Turkish* Galley, in which he maintained a Fight for some Minutes, with the Slaughter of several *Turks* before he could be seconded.

Don *John of Austria*, his General, after the Victory enquired, If that brave Soldier had

had escaped with Life? and on being answered he had, and belonged to his Highness's own Regiment, he farther enquired, if he was wounded? On being informed so slightly that it did not confine him, the General said no more than, I rejoice at it.

The next Day but one, Don *John* sent for him; gave him the highest Commendations before the Generals, a large Purse of Gold with all found on board that Prize he had first boarded, belonging to the *Turkish* Commander, which was a considerable Booty: his Discharge from the Service, and a Letter to the King, ordering him to get to *Madrid* as soon as possible, and deliver it into his Majesty's own Hands.

He lost no Time in executing these Commands, and, by telling the Lord in waiting his Errand and Instructions, gained easy Admission.

The King, having read the Letter of his Highness, gave the Soldier his Hand to kiss; commanded him to be at Court that Day se'nnight, and to enquire for the Lord of the Bed-chamber, who should have Orders to admit him.

The Day appointed he waited upon, and was introduced to the King, who did him the Honour to ask the Particulars of the Battle. He answered, that he was incapable of giving his Majesty any other Account than their having  
attacked

attcked and beaten the Infidels, with the Divine Assistance, which, he hoped, would ever accompany his Majesty's Enterprizes that, being a private Soldier, he was intent only on observing and executing the Commands of his superior Officers.

'Tis well, said the King, you convince me, that Modesty and Bravery are inseparable. His Majesty condescended to enquire whence, and what he was, before he took Arms; of which he gave his Majesty an ingenuous Account, and the King replied 'Tis Vertue that truly ennoblés; go to the Secretary of War, I have mentioned you to him, and at Night be present in the Drawing-room.

On his Dismission from the King, he went to the Secretary of War's Office, sent in his Name, and was immediately called for.

At his Entrance, the Secretary met, embraced him, in the Presence of several General Officers and Colonels, and put him to the Blush, by the Character he gave of his Bravery. after which he added, I have the King's particular Commands with regard to you. His Majesty makes it a Maxim to encourage Vertue by his Munificence. Let me see you at this Hour To-morrow; come directly to, and knock at my Door; I will take care you shall meet with no Delays.

On his second Visit to the Secretary, he put into his Hand a Patent of Nobility, a Com-  
mission

mission to raise and command an Independent Company of an hundred Men, which he was to carry to *Mexico*. (This was as good as a Regiment in *Spain*, and a very particular Favour.) With these, an Order on a Banker for Money to make and cloath these Levies, and a Purse of a Thousand Pistoles, to furnish out his own Equipage, concluding with his Advice to frequent the Court, while he continued at *Madrid*.

He did not fail in this Point, without neglecting the Business of his Levies, which he soon compleated, in *Madrid*, having met with two of his Comrades, brave Fellows, whom he made his Serjeants, and who were very industrious in the raising Men.

When he had compleated his Company, he acquainted the Secretary of War, who was surprized at his Expedition.

The King, next Day, in the Circle, bid him order his Company to march to *Cales*, under the Care of the Subalterns, whom he had appointed, as the *Flota* would sail in a short Time; but said, that he himself had Permission to follow them, when he thought proper.

He answered, with Thanks for his Majesty's Indulgence, adding, he had his Royal Master's Service only in View; wherefore he would himself march his Company to the Port,

Port, and sail with it; that in three Days, he should have every Thing for their March in Readiness, would set out on the fourth, and prayed Heaven to shower its choicest Blessings upon his Majesty, and his Royal Family. The King, extending his Hand, which he had the Honour to kiss, wished him a prosperous Voyage.

I gave you a Description of this Man's Person and Temper; you will find, by the Sequel, this Picture was necessary.

In their Voyage a beautiful Youth, who had list'd in his Company, and of whom he had taken particular Notice, fell sick. as the Surgeon thought him in Danger, *Casa Blanca* ordered the Lad to be brought into his own Cabin, Beds to be made for him of Mattom and Fowls, and took great Care for his Recovery.

The Youth seem'd to have a settled Melancholy, which his Captain attributing to a Regret for leaving *Spain*, to encourage him, promised he would sign his Discharge, and that he should return with the same Fleet.

Will you then, said the Youth, send me back? You may depend on my Word once given, answered *Casa Blanca*. You then send me, said the other, to certain Death. I cannot quit you and support Life. Having said this, he fetch'd a deep Sigh.

The

The Captain, surprized, asked him, What he meant by these Words? I will tell you, replied the other, raising himself in his Bed. I am not what I appear, though my Dress has disguised my Sex, I am the Daughter of *Emanuel Mendoza*, the rich Banker, with whom you dealt, and who paid you the Orders of the Secretary of War.

The first Sight of you made an Impression, which sunk deeper every Time I saw you; and my Passion became so violent, that, had you left *Spain*, and me in it, I could not have survived your Departure; wherefore I resolved, in Men's Cloaths, to list in your Company for *America*, that I might have the Pleasure of seeing and being with you; but I found the longer keeping this Secret would be as fatal, as your leaving me behind.

Madam, said *Casa Blanca*, I am sorry the Honour you do me, has made you take a Step, which may draw cruel Censures on me, and your own Vertue, of which, however, I will be a Protector, and a just Guardian. Take Courage, Madam, you shall find me a true Soldier; I mean, incapable of any Thing ungenerous or base. Endeavour to regain your Health, if you would not reduce me to the languishing Condition you are now in: for my Gratitude, had not your Beauty the Effect it has, would make your Loss insupportable

supportable to me. He embraced her, saying this, in Hopes, flattering those she had formed, might contribute to her Recovery, as indeed it did; for she grew daily better, and was in few Days able to take the Air upon the Quarter-Deck.

In the Interim, a Calm happening, *Casa-Blanca* was invited to dine on board the Admiral of six Men of War, Convoy to the Fleet, which were to leave them at the *Cape de Verd* Islands, and return to *Spain*. After Dinner he took the Admiral aside into the Steerage, and acquainted him with this Affair, asking his Advice, and whether he was not of Opinion he ought in Honour to send her back under his Care.

The Admiral answered, it was a matter of some Delicacy; that he could not so suddenly advise him what Course to take; that he feared the young Lady would, by no means, consent to this; and if she was forced, it might be of fatal Consequence, since her Passion had had such violent Effects by its being concealed: that besides, her Reputation would be quite ruined; for the World would judge, his sending her back, proceeded rather from his being satiated with her Possession, than from a Principle of Honour; but, added the Admiral, if the Calm continues, I will dine on Board of you To-

H

morrow



Morrow and in the Interim, I will consider what is best to be done.

That Night a brisk Gale sprang up, and continuing till they reached the before-mentioned Islands, they hadnot, till then, an Opportunity to see each other.

The Admiral there advised his communicating this Secret to the Captains of the other Men of War, who also returned to *Spain*; to get the young Lady's Declaration, and his own Affidavit drawn up, that he was ignorant of her Elopement; that he had not attempted her Honour; that on the contrary, he would be her Protector, and, if her Father consented, would marry her in the Face of the Church, or, if he desired it, send her back by the first Ship from *la Vera Cruz*: adding, that he would acquaint her Father of what had passed between *Casa-Blanca* and himself.

This Counsel was embraced. The young Lady not only made such Declaration, but moreover would confirm it with her Oath before the Governor.

*Casa-Blanca* bought for her Woman's Apparel, and she threw off her Regimentals; which, when returning, to her Captain, she told him, that Cloathing, and what he had bought for her, being so much out of his Pocket, it was reasonable she should reimburse him: putting into his Hands a Parcel of large Diamonds;

monds; adding, that they were her Grand-mother's Legacy, and never the Property of her Father, of whose Effects she had not taken a Real. *Casa Blanca* answered, that he would lay them up for her.

When they arrived at *la Vera Cruz*, as that is reckoned an unhealthy Spot, the Captain carried his Female Recruit with him to *Mexico*. There she entered into a Monastery to wait her Father's Resolution, her own being to take the Veil, if he was averse to her Desires.

The old Merchant in *Spain*, thoroughly satisfied of *Casa-Blanca's* Innocence, and charmed with his Behaviour, not only sent his Consent to receive him for a Son in Law, but remitted him Goods to the Amount of ten Thousand Pistoles, and at his Death left him double that Sum. This Money he drew into *America*, and purchased two large Sugar Works.

The Captain and his Lady lived happily together. They had but one Son, whom they outlived. He left the Gentleman in Question, and his elder Brother, both of them born of one Mother, the Daughter of Don *Diego Pintero*, descended from one of the Soldiers of *Hernando Cortez*, who settled in the Country.

The Descendants of these Soldiers stile themselves Conquerors, and are extremely

proud of the Title, to which they think that of Grandee's inferior.

Old *Casa-Blanca* left to his elder Grandson all his Estate, and gave the younger a Fortune in Money, which he soon dissipated by his Love for Play, his present only Support.

His Character is the reverse of his Grandfather's : for this Man is very vain and empty, quarrelsome and timid, though he is a most terrible Fellow, where he thinks his Asses Ears have not discovered the Lion's Skin to be no more, than a borrowed Covering. His elder Brother has, by his Behaviour, gained the Esteem of all who know him ; and this Spark, the Contempt of all his Acquaintance, except such as are of the same Mould, of which there are many in this City.

These are capable of a private Murder, but will never face an Enemy in the Field ; wherefore it would be imprudent in you to be out of your House when 'tis dark, if you are not well armed, and guarded by several Servants. You have, besides the two who attend your Person, always a sufficient Number of your Muletiers in Town, to protect you against Insults.

The next Morning I waited on the Vice-Roy, according to his Command. He desired I would lay out for him twenty Thousand  
land

sand Crowns in such Merchandize, as might turn to a better Account in *Spain*, than Pieces of Eight, if he sent them.

I told his Highness, I was very ready to obey his Commands, and would shew him the last Letters from my Correspondent.

He seemed pleased with my Candor, and expressing a Desire to see them, I sent one of my Servants with Orders to my Book-keeper, to bring them. These specified, what *American* Goods were, at the Time of his Writing, in greatest Demand; but left it to me to govern myself by the Quantities of the respective Goods I should observe shipped for *Spain*.

When his Highness had read these Letters, he said, I am still in the Dark; for, no doubt, other Merchants have the same Advice, and the Markets in *Spain* may, at the Return of the Fleet, be glutted with what is now wanted. How shall I learn which of these Goods are shipped in the least Quantity?

I answered, that I had constant Advice every Week, from my Correspondent at *la Vera Cruz*, of the Qualities and Quantities of what Goods came out of the Country to that Port, to be put on board the Fleet; that as yet very little *Cochenile* had been sent, except what was on my Account; and as I had greatly magnified that Quantity, pre-

tended I had much more to send, and had refused, publicly, to buy of that Commodity, though my Agents, underhand, bought up all they could, I was of Opinion, there would be but very little sent by any other Trader: I therefore thought, he could lay out his Money in Nothing which would so well answer.

But, said his Highness, won't my sending that Commodity, hurt your Interest? I assured him, the Sum of twenty Thousand Crowns would make but little Difference in the *European* Markets.

Well, replied the Vice-Roy, do me the Favour to manage for me; consign it to your own Correspondents, and order the Returns in what you shall judge proper. There is that Sum, putting a Draught in my Hand on a Merchant in the City.

I received, laid it out, and shipped the *Cochinile*. Luckily it arrived at a Time that Commodity was very scarce; and the Returns made me, on that particular Parcel, I sold for sixty Thousand Crowns in *Mexico*; of which I gave his Highness an Account. He was extremely satisfied with a Profit of two hundred *per Cent*, and desired I would again employ that Sum; but I told his Highness, that he must not expect such Profits would often accrue, and ought to esteem this as an extraordinary Accident.

C H A P.

## C H A P. IX.

*A Design of assassinating Scipio, discovered and punished.*

**I** Heard Nothing from *Casa-Blanca* of so long a Space, that I not only forgot the Advice given me, but even thought no more of him. For about a Month or five Weeks I was upon my Guard, and either came home early, or well attended. Never having been attacked, I thought the Precaution as useless as troublesome, and grew more careless; but I found I had to deal with a Man, who, though he durst not revenge the rough Treatment I gave him, by calling me into the Field (which Cowardice he would have covered over with the Inequality between him and a Pedlar, as I was termed by my Envyers) yet he could stomach it.

About twenty Days after I had lain aside my usual Precaution, I was sent for to the Vice-Roy about two Hours after Dinner. He had hardly spoke to me, when Word was brought him, that some of the Magistrates desired immediate Audience. Leaving me in his Room, he desired I would wait his Return; but that happened not till near

three Hours and a Half after, which I was inwardly vexed at, being, by Engagement, to sup that Night with a Friend; as it was his Saint's Day, on which he always made a grand Entertainment. His Highness, at his Return, told me, he was sorry I had waited so long; but, as I knew he could not neglect his Majesty's Service, he did not question I would excuse him; however, continued he, I will no longer abuse your Patience; go and sup with Don *Melchior*, to whom, I know, you are engaged, and be here Tomorrow early, I want to speak to you about a Matter of Moment.

I took my Leave of his Highness, and drove to my Friend's House, where he received me with an unusual Joy; and I received Compliments from all the Company on my Escape.

Escape? said I, What mean you Gentlemen? Why, said Don *Melchior*, Master of the House, we heard the younger *Casa-Blanca* was determined this Day to fight you, on Account of some Affront you put upon him. He has long, replied I, been coming to such a Determination, and, I believe, will be yet longer; but, whenever he does, I shall not think myself in any Danger. But, said one of the Company, the Apprehensions you were under on his Account, made you for some time keep good Hours, or be well guarded

guarded when you did not. I replied, it was true; but Prudence against an Assassin ought not to be accounted Fear. With a brave Man I should not have made use of such Precautions, they would have been useless; but Don *Carpio*, with half a dozen Names more *de la Casa-blanca*, was represented to me in a different Light; nay, as capable of stabbing a Man in the dark. I answer for it, said another, he is incapable of perpetrating such a Villany.

No, added Don *Melchior*, I will forfeit all I am worth, whenever you receive any private Hurt from that Gentleman. I answered, that I was then sorry I had injured him in my Opinion. The Supper being served in, this Topic was dropped, and no more resumed that Night, which we spent very chearfully.

The next Morning I went to pay my Duty to the Vice-Roy. When I was at the Closet-Door, he looked out and said, *Senior Scipio*, I had something to say to you; but, as the King's Business now engages my Time and Attention, go in my Name to the \* *Alcalde Mayor de Justicia*, he will acquaint you with the Affair. I drove thither, and sending in my Orders, was conducted to the *Alcalde's* Chamber.

H 5

He

\* The Supreme Judge, or Lord Chief Justice.



He made me sit down, and calling for another Cup, being himself at Breakfast, said, *Senior Scipio*, when you have taken your Chocolate, I must have a little Discourse with you. The Diction, *I must have a little Discourse with you*, considering who pronounced it, would have given me a Palpitation of Heart, had I been conscious of any Guilt; but as I was quite clear, I heard it with Indifference.

The Table being removed, and the Room left to us, the *Alcalde* began thus—*Senior*, I have been informed there is a secret Enmity between you and *Don Carpio de la Casa-blanca*; I am obliged, by the Duty of my Post, to be vigilant that neither the King's Justice be insulted, nor his Subjects Lives endangered, If I would, as becomes an upright Judge, perform the Functions, I must endeavour rather industriously to prevent Duels and Assassinations, than be severe in punishing Duelists and Murderers.

I distinguish, because I know the World puts a wide Difference between them, though, I own, I see only this Distinction to be made; the Duelist, led on by romantic Notions of Honour, throws off Religion, denies Christianity, which teaches brotherly Love, Mildness and Forbearance; and, deserting the Banners of his Redeemer, lifts under those of the Prince of Darkness, setting Body and Soul

Soul at Stake, to be revenged on his Enemy, and drag him down with himself to the Depths of eternal Misery: while the other, also a Renegado to his God, consults his present Safety, and endeavours to kill Body and Soul, with Security to his own Life.

Excuse my having lain these Considerations before you, as the Nature of the Information I have received, exacts it from me.

I must now ask you, and I promise myself, from the Character you bear, that you will be ingenuous; What is the Quarrel between you and Don *Carpio*? What is the Cause?

I answered, my Lord, I will not deceive you in your Expectations, but give an Account of all I know, without the least Palliation. This I did, and proceeded; I have no Quarrel to Don *Carpio*, and am sorry he has any to me. If he was not instigated by Envy to insult me, I am not conscious, that he can allege other Cause. Ever since I have been in *America*, my mercantile Affairs have engrossed my Time and my Attention; and, if I had not been sent for by the Vice-Roy, I am satisfied, I should have given no Man Uneasiness by my appearing at his Court.

*Senior Scipio*, I believe you have made a candid Relation. Excuse me, if I put some other Questions to you, which I think, nay,

I am pretty sure, I could answer to myself; but, notwithstanding, I am obliged by my Post, to require your Answer. Did you ever send to, or receive from Don *Carpio* any Challenge?

My Lord, Never. I own, the Question surprizes me—You are sure you never sent him one?—I am sure, my Lord, it never came into my Thoughts; the Treatment I gave him was, in my Opinion, a sufficient Reparation of the Insult I received from him—You never, consider *Senior*, received any from him? Never, upon my Probity—It suffices, I expected these Answers; I must, however, ask one Question more. Do you know any thing of a Design to assassinate Don *Carpio*?—Heavens preserve me from falling low enough, for any Russian thinking me a proper Person to be conscious of such a Villany!—That is no categorical answer—Then, my Lord, I never, directly or indirectly, heard of the base Design, and I believe, he that had a Conscience black enough to let him harbour it, would scarcely make me his Confidant.

Now hear me: Don *Carpio*, with six of his Comrades, Men of dissolute Lives, common Gamsters, yesterday, after Dinner, took a Room in a Tavern; called for Wine, and there concluded upon assassinating you, at  
your

your Return from Don *Melchior's*, where they were rightly informed, you were to sup.

When they had drunk two or three Bottles, and appointed the Hour for their meeting in the same Room, they called the Landlord, ordered him to keep it for them that Evening; and, paying their Reckoning, separated.

That Day an *Indian* Slave, who had angered his Master and apprehended Correction, hid himself, in hopes that his Passion being over, he might hear him in his Justification. The Place the Slave had chosen to abscond in, was the very Room, these Gentlemen drank and consulted in, where he had concealed himself under a Side-Table, covered with a large Carpet, which reached to the Ground.

As soon as they were gone, he appeared, and submissively said to his Master, I beg Pardon for my Fault; but 'twas possibly a Providence, that I was guilty of it. I have something of Moment to tell you, which, I beg, you will hear with Patience and endeavour to save an honest Man's Life. If, when you have heard me, you please to inflict a Punishment for my Negligence first, and my avoiding you afterwards, I submit to it.

The

The Master bid him proceed; and when he had heard the Slave's Story, brought him to me.

I visited the Room, and saw it very possible for a Youth to lie concealed where he said he lay all the Time the Company with Don *Carpia* continued there. The Master and his Family attested that they could none of them find him for some Time before, and during their Stay, though he was wanted in his Business, and often called.

The Tavern-keeper knew every one of the Assassines, and where they lodged, having often sent Wine to their respective Quarters. I imposed these People Silence; acquainted the Vice-Roy, and desired he would command a Guard to secure the Russians at one and the same Time, as I imagined (and as it happened) they were retired to their respective Homes for a \* *Siesta*.

Three Men with Pistols under their Cloaks, were immediately ordered to their different Lodgings, to secure and carry them with all possible Privacy to the Jail. At the same time the Vice-Roy sent for you, to prevent your Danger, fearing you might come in the Way of any of these Murderers, and they, heated with Wine, perpetrate their Villany sooner than proposed.

His

\* After Dinner's Nap.

His Highness left you, as not knowing by what Pretence he could detain you, without telling the Affair, which he was unwilling to do, till he was sure the Information was well grounded.

The Assassines were all taken separately, and without Noise. They denied the Charge; but the Sight of the Executioner and Rack, brought them to Confession. Don *Carpio* accused you, as having provoked him to it by a Blow, and afterwards by sending him a Challenge, which he thought below him to answer.

You may now, Sir, go where you please in Safety; these Men shall never endanger the Life of any of his Majesty's Subjects: The Example of their Punishment will, I hope, deter others from ever entertaining Thoughts of perpetrating such unnatural Villanies. Saying this, he arose abruptly, as if he would prevent my speaking in their Favour, and withdrew to his Closet.

I now perceived the Drift of the Discourse, with which I was entertained the Night before at my Entrance into Don *Melchior's*. My Servants had been sent for by the *Alcalde*, and examined if they knew any thing of a Difference between Don *Carpio* and me.

As Truth has but one Face, the Book-keeper and four Clerks separately examined,

ha

had given the same Account verbatim, which I gave him. They were enjoined Secrecy, and said nothing to me, because indeed they had no Opportunity, the best Reason I can allege for their Discretion, with Regard to myself; but they whispered the Story, under the Seal of Secrecy, to so many of their Acquaintance, every one of whom respectively entrusted his Friends, and they again their Friends, and so on, under the same Injunction, that it became a Secret which every Individual of the Town was enjoined not to divulge.

From the *Alcalde's* I went, as fast as my Horses could drive me, to the Palace, to intercede for Pardon; his Highness would not see me, and sent out Word he was engaged.

I was heartily concerned; the Discourse of the *Alcalde* made me fear he would proceed against these unhappy Men with all the Rigour of the Law; I therefore went Home, and wrote a supplicatory Letter to the Vice-Roy in their Behalf, and begged as a Charity done me, who should never enjoy Peace of Mind, if they were condemned to die, that he would mitigate the Severity of the Law, by interposing Mercy. I concluded my Letter with entreating him to admit me to an Audience.

His

His Highness read my Letter, and sent Word, I might come to the Palace at three that Afternoon. I went at the appointed Time, and found the Square before it filled with Soldiers, and Inhabitants.

In the Middle I saw a Scaffold erected for the Execution of these intentional Assassins, who had, that very Morning, been tryed, convicted by their own Confession, and condemned to lose their Heads.

The Populace seeing my Coach, and imagining I came to glut my Revenge with the bloody Spectacle of their Execution, began to gather round, and insult me; but they were soon dispersed by the Soldiers.

I was admitted to the Vice-Roy's Presence, where I immediately threw myself on my Knees, and begged for Mercy with such prevailing Instance for my real Concern had given me an Eloquence not only surprizing to his Highness and the By-Standers, but to myself, seconded by my Tears, that it wrought upon the Vice-roy to change their Sentence of Death to that of perpetual Imprisonment.

However, he commanded them to be brought upon the Scaffold, and kept ignorant of this Clemency till they had made the last Preparations to receive the fatal Stroak.

Having given these Orders to his principal Secretary, and he to the Magistrates and Ministers



sters of Justice, they were brought from the Jail to the Scaffold, where they behaved with such Christian Decency and Composure, as greatly affected all the Spectators.

When Don *Carpio's* Eyes were bound, and he placed upon his Knees, the Magistrate who attended the Execution proclaimed the Vice-Roy's Clemency, which, he farther added, was obtained by the instant Petitions of the Person, against whose Life they had formed the Design which then made them a publick Spectacle.

As soon as this Proclamation was made, the Place rang with Shouts, and the Vice-Roy heard the universal Blessings of the People, nay, even they, who had their Crime in Abhorrence, applauded this Act of Mercy, termed by all, a just Sequel of his Highness's Vigilance, which had prevented the Perpetration of the intended Villany.

The Gentlemen who had heard me strenuously plead for Mercy, going out of the Palace, spoke of my Intercession, as an Act of the highest Generosity; and the Populace being thus confirmed in the Truth of what the Magistrate had before declared from the Scaffold, were so changed in their Sentiments, that they, who but two Hours before would have stopped my Coach, to have pulled me in Pieces, would now scarcely let it go forward, that they might shower Blessing

sings on me. The cruel, the implacable, the blood-thirsty Scoundrel of a Pedlar, were changed to the generous, the human, the Christian-like Don *Scipio*.

---

## C H A P. X.

### *The Death and last Will of the Bishop of Guaxaca.*

**S** O O N after I made a Journey to *Guaxaca*, in several Towns of which Province I had settled Factors. This Method proved a great Ease to me; for it reduced my Journeys to a single annual one.

At my Arrival, I found the venerable good Prelate in a very weak Condition, given over by his Physicians.

He was told, that I was come to pay him my Duty, on the hearing of which he seemed to revive as from a Lethargy and ordered me to be immediately conducted to his Bed-side. He put out his Hand to me, and grasping mine, made me sit down in a Chair close to his Bolster. My dear Friend, said he, I am now upon the Verge of Death, the Goal for which we all set out at our Entrance into the World. The assured Hopes  
in

in the powerful Mediation of our blessed Redeemer, that the Sins of my Youth are done away, make me wait with Joy the Moment of my Dissolution, and my present weak Condition, which my Friends term deplorable, administers to me the greatest Consolation. Here he was seized with a convulsive Fit. I called for Assistance, and he came to himself in about seven Minutes. He endeavoured to speak to me again; but uttered only inarticulate Sounds. he held me by the Hand, and lifting up his Eyes gave one Sigh, and expired.

It is impossible for me to paint the Grief I was seized with, or the Cries, the piercing Cries, with which the whole Palace rang. The Town in general was affected, and every Particular seemed to mourn and lament the Loss of a Father. He was so generally beloved, that every one of the Town, who had the Means, put himself in Mourning,

At the News of his Death, the Governor and all the principal Men of the Town came into the Palace to visit his Remains, and bewail their and the publick Loss. The Gates were crowded with the Populace both *Spaniards* and *Indians*, and the Air filled with Screeches of the poor sorrowful Wretches, who had indeed lost a Patron. The poor Orphan, was deprived of a second Father,  
and

and the ancient helpless Widow of another Husband.

The next Day the Governor, with the Magistrates, met to give Orders for his Funeral: But, supposing, if he had made a Will, that he had therein given Directions; they adjourned to the Palace, and calling for the Steward demanded the late Bishop's Keys.

In examining his Cabinet, the first sealed Paper that came to their Hands, was what they searched after. Upon opening and reading it they sent immediately to me. When I came they gave me the late Bishop's Will, and said they had nothing farther to enquire into, as his Lordship had made me Residuary Legatee and sole Executor. That they should order Masses for the Repose of his Soul, and offer up their Prayers to be blessed with a Successor like him, though they did not deserve so great a Mercy.

The Steward, who was present, looking on me as his Master, with all possible Respect, desired I would leave my Apartment, and take up my Lodging in the Palace, as it would be more convenient for me, and be a Sanction to the Reputation of his late Lord's Servants. I thought the Man judged right, and resolved to lie there, but without my own Servants.

The

The Governor and Magistrates having left me in Possession, nothing elated with my being Residuary Legatee as I was thoroughly grieved for my departed Patron, I sat down and read his Will, of which I will read the Copy :

**H**IS Holiness having commanded me to return to the World; take upon me the Cure of Souls in America, and fill this then vacant See, in Obedience, I submitted to enter again on that tempestuous Ocean, though I had anchored in a Haven of Security, guarded against most of the Dangers and Perils, to which I was afresh to expose myself; and by which I hazarded my eternal Happiness, if not greatly assisted by that divine Grace which I daily have, and still implore.

His Majesty, always august and zealous for the propagating the true Religion, confirming the Nomination of me, (unworthy) at the Expense of that magnanimous Monarch, I came safe, God protecting me, and took Possession of the See of Guaxaca, where I found the Palace furnished with every Thing necessary and grand, besides a Profusion of Plate, and ten Thousand Pieces of Eight, by an Order from our Sovereign to his Treasurer of this Province, who, told me, the said Sum his Majesty had appointed for my Support, till I had received the first Year's Revenue of my See.

With

*With the Humility and Thankfulness due from so mean a Subject, I received his Majesty's charitable Bounty, and interpreted it, as his Majesty always acts with deliberate Wisdom, a pious Gift of that Monarch to the See of Guaxaca.*

*Wherefore I hereby declare, that I do not and never did, look upon or esteem the same to be my particular Property, or what I could dispose of, so as to deprive my Successors of the Ufu-fruit, without Sacrilege. And I entreat the Governor and Magistrates of this Town to become Trustees for my Successors of the said Goods and Money which, as I received the Arrears during the Vacancy of the Bishoprick, I had no Occasion to diminish and they will find augmented by the Addition of the Interest, in Deeds of Security on Lands, locked up in the very Coffer which contained his Majesty's Bounty: Where also is a Catalogue of all the Furniture and Plate, none of which I have, and hope the same of my Servants, embezzled.*

*I farther declare, that as I always looked up on the Revenues of the See of Guaxaca to be the Inheritance of the Poor, excepting what was necessary for the Use of the Church, and to keep up the Dignity of a Bishop in an hospitable Table, I never appropriated to myself but the tenth Part, for my Salary as their Steward, which I have reserved for my Funeral*

neral; and to reward my Servants, at my Death.

Having made this previous Declaration in the Presence of God, (whom I attest) without any Motive of Vanity.

**I** Gaspar Velazquez, Bishop of Guaxaca, who have, blessed be my Creator, my Death always in View, than which, my present Existence is not more certain, to prevent all Disputes that may arise, with Regard to what may be supposed to have been mine, while numbered among the Living, do make the following Declaration, the Sequel of which, I desire, may be esteemed, deemed, and taken as my last Will and Testament, though, it may be defective, in Forms and Terms of Law. And I have, in the Presence of the subscribing Witnesses, to whom I read the Testamentary Part, formally and solemnly declared, that it is what I desire may be complied with, and performed, according to the literal Sense of the Words, being all written with my own Hand, and sealed with the Seal, of the Bishoprick of Guaxaca, this — Day of — in the Year of Redemption —.

In the first Place, with a Heart truly contrite, begging the Almighty's Mercy, I commend my Soul to that divine Compassion, which not only rescued us poor Worms, from the Captivity of Sin' and Death, by the Sufferings of his blessed Son, the second Person of the ineffably

effably, glorious, and incomprehensible Trinity, eternally blessed; but with-holds his Sword of Justice, from executing Judgment on a flagitious World.

My Body, the Feast of Worms, when abandoned by the Soul, and combining now at this Instant against it, by taking Part with its implacable Enemies, the World and the Devil, I leave to be interred at the good Pleasure of my Executor, herein after named, with Regard to the Ceremony of committing it to its Kindred Dust, desiring at the same Time that he considers the Dignity of the Bishop, that he would also have an Eye to the Humility and Poverty of the Carthusian.

What few worldly Goods and Possessions it has pleased God, by the Benevolence of Friends, to bless me with, I will and dispose of in Manner following:

Imprimis, What Money I have saved out of the Tenths of the Revenues of my See, I desire, and will it to be distributed among my Servants. One fourth Part of the Whole to be paid to my Steward, as a Legacy by which I acknowledge his Fidelity. The remaining three Parts, I bequeath to be divided among my other Domesticks.

Item, I will, that my Executor sell my Mules, Horses, Coaches, and every Thing appertaining to them, for defraying the Expence of my Funeral.

I

Item,



Item, I give to my said Executor my Silver-Cup, the Present of my Sister, and only Piece of Plate I can properly call mine. I also bequeath to my said Executor and his Heirs for ever, my House with all the Furniture in the City of Mexico, given me by the Will of my deceased Friend Don Geronimo Vasquez.

Item, I give to my Sister my Emerald-Ring, the Gift of his Highness the Vice-roy.

Item, I give and bequeath to the Prisoners of the Town of Guaxaca, at the Time of my Decease, all my Linnen marked V, which I may call mine, as it is most of it the Gifts of my Acquaintance, to be sold and divided among the said Prisoners in Proportion to their Necessities. The Linnen which I myself have purchased out of the Interest of his Majesty's Bounty, is marked G, as I deem it belonging to the See, and accordingly leave it to the Use of my Successor.

Whatever else I have, as wearing Cloaths and Linnen, or what may honestly be judged my Property, I will that it be sold and distributed among the Persons who shall carry my Corpse out of the Palace.

I appoint my Friend Scipio, Merchant at Mexico, Executor of this my last Will.

Having read this Testament, I waited on the Governor and Magistrates, and desired they

they would command an Inventory of their Trust to be made and take Possession of it.

I ordered the Funeral to be performed in a Manner becoming the Character of the Bishop, which cost twelve hundred Crowns more than he had destined to that Use. His Corpse was attended to the Grave by all the Inhabitants of the Town, who were able to leave their Houses, every one carrying a white Wax Taper : It was preceded by all the religious Orders.

I next performed every Particular of the good Bishop's Will. The Linnen marked *V* sold for three thousand Crowns, a Proof of his being well beloved. His wearing Cloaths and Linnen, with whatever else I thought his, did not amount to quite three Hundred, a Sign of his Moderation.

When I went to give the Bishop's Legacy to the Prisoners, I was not a little surprized to find among them my *Indian* Dealer, who had put me in the Way of the Inland-trade.

Having made the Distribution, which set several at Liberty, I called him and asked What Misfortunes had fixed him in a Jail ; and why he had not applied to me ? He answered, That he carried on Trade with the Stock of other *Indians*, who had entrusted him, and with them he divided the Profits. That they having learned, it was by his Instructions a *Spaniard* had under-

taken to furnish the Country with Goods, jealous that others might follow the Example and they lose the Benefit of the Inland-trade, revenged themselves on him by calling in their Money when it was out of his Hands, not allowing him Time to gather in his Debts, which would have over paid them : but, seizing on his Books and Effects, threw him into Prison. I asked the Sum he was charged with? he answered, It was seven hundred Crowns. I made him no Answer, but went Home and carried him a Thousand; bid him send for, satisfy his Creditors and come to my Lodging, which he did the third Day after.

*Augustine*, that was his Name, said I, as you have suffered on my Account, 'tis but just I should make you amends. Come with me to *Mexico*, examine my Ware-houses; take the Goods you think most for your Purpose, you shall have Credit for what you hope to dispose of, and I will furnish you with the Mules necessary.

On our Return to *Mexico*, *Augustine* picked out Goods to the Value of five hundred Crowns, not the tenth Part of what he used to trade for.

I was so pleased with his Modesty, that I made him up a Loading to the Amount of five Thousand, and gave him twenty Mules at the Price they cost me. I had the Satisfaction

faction to see this honest *Indian* in the Space of three Years, in very happy Circumstances, and out of Debt.

I took Possession of the Bishop's Legacy, a very large, stately House, and richly furnished by the Gentleman who had given it to him by Will.

Soon after my Return from my Country Journey, the Vice-roy sent for me. I waited on him to know his Highness's Commands. Making me sit down by him, Senior *Scipio*, said he, What Money have you of mine? I answered, I could not justly tell, without ballancing the Account of *Gulermo Aldea*.

What have I to do with *Aldea*? — 'Tis a feigned Name under which I have kept Account of the Business I have had the Honour to transact for your Highness, and, in case of Mortality, I have made a Declaration of this under my Hand, sealed up and directed to your Highness. — I greatly approve your Prudence and Fore-sight. Do you think you have a Hundred-thousand Crowns of my Money? — I believe considerably more: But if your Highness should want more than your own Cash, I will honour any Draught your Highness shall make on me. — I thank you, Senior *Scipio*. I have been advised by Don *Juan Cordova*, to enter upon

upon a very beneficial Business, which he will manage for me.

*Indian Maize*, and *European Wheat*, were never cheaper than at present, as the last was a most plentiful Harvest. Now by advancing a Real *per* Bushel on the Wheat, the *Spaniards* will readily part with all they have; for the ensuing Harvest promises a fine Crop. Don *Juan* proposes the engrossing this Grain, and when the Covetousness of the *Spaniards* has given it into our Hands, we may set our own Price upon it. What's your Opinion of the Project? I own with me it bears a good Face.

I begged his Highness would excuse me from offering my Sentiments on an Affair, in which I was not conversant. He insisted on my speaking sincerely my Thoughts. I avoided it as long as I could with Decency; but finding myself under a Necessity, though I feared the Consequence, I told his Highness, the Project would certainly bring a great Deal of Money, and I should approve it, did I not fear some ill Effects might follow the putting it in Execution.—What ill Effects?—

If by the Imprudence of Don *Juan*, or your Highness refusing to regulate the Price of Corn, when it is wanted, and held by him at an exorbitant Price, your Highness should be suspected to be concerned with him,

him, it may cast a Blemish on that excellent Character you have acquired by your Justice and Moderation. Besides, I apprehend the engrossing Corn, may cause Murmurs, if not a Tumult among the People.

I find, Senior *Scipio*, you are as fit for the Cabinet as the Counting-house; I must have you added to his Majesty's Council of *Mexico*.

He spoke this with a Sneer of Contempt, and added, Pray draw out *Aldea's* Account, and let me know whether you are in Cash to pay the Ballance.

I told his Highness, that my obeying his Commands to speak my Opinion, and that with Sincerity, had, I feared, made me incur his Displeasure. Not at all, Senior *Scipio*, replied he, I love plain Dealing, and a Man who foresees Consequences; though I must own, I am surprized that you apprehended nothing for yourself when you excised the People by engrossing the Oils of the Fleet. You will go Home, and bring me what I require in two Days.

I answered, I would not fail; but in the Interim, his Highness wanting any Sum, as far as five hundred Thousand Crowns, I had Cash to answer his Commands; having bought no Goods in the Country, and collected the Ballance of Accounts among my

Factors.--- It is very well, Senior; we shall see if we want your Friendship.

I took my Leave as soon as possibly I could, for I perceived I had put the Viceroy into an ill Humour, and reasonably apprehended him my Enemy.

At my Return to my own House, I ordered *Aldea's* Account current to be drawn out, by which there appeared due to him a hundred forty-seven Thousand Pieces of Eight and three Reals.

This I carried the next Day to the Viceroy, and the following Don *Juan de Cordova* came to me with an Order for that Sum which was instantly paid him.

I was no more sent for to Court, and as I had no Business I never went thither; but employed myself entirely in my Counting-House, intending to settle all my Affairs and return to *Europe*, with all possible Expedition, not caring to stay in a Place where the Representative of the King, invested with almost an absolute Power, was my Enemy, at least not my Friend. But, having many Goods in the Inland Countries, and expecting more by the next Year's Fleet, which I would dispose of to the best Advantage, it was upwards of three Years after I had taken that Resolution, before I could settle every Thing, in such Manner as not to be obliged to return to *America*; within which

which Space, the Advice of Don *Juan de Cordova* having lost the Vice-roy his Dignity, he was recalled upon that very Account.

Don *Juan* bought up the Corn at fourteen Reals a Bushel, which was a Real above the Market-price, and so entirely engrossed the Wheat and Maize, that none appeared in the Markets, excepting what he sent, and held the Wheat at one and twenty Reals; the Maize at a Rate proportionable.

This at first caused a Murmuring among the People; for the Poor could not pay the Price: consequently Bread was as scarce with them as in Time of Famine. They complained to the Archbishop, he represented the Case of these poor Creatures to the Vice-roy, desiring he would set a reasonable Price on *Cordova's* Corn, and command him to send it to Market at the Rate his Highness should fix.

The Vice-roy replied, That he had no Authority, except in Time of Famine, to force any Man's Property from him, without paying the Price he valued it at.

The Archbishop argued long, but, finding it to no Purpose, withdrew; and when the Poor clamoured about his Gates, the next Morning, told them what he had represented to the Vice-roy, but feared his Highness was himself too much interested in the Monopoly to redress their Grievances.



One of the Populace, saying Hunger would break through Stone Walls, the Archbishop replied, that *Cordova's* Store-houses were but of Brick and Timber, and immediately stepped into his Coach.

This Answer from his Grace the People looked upon a sufficient Authority to plunder, as they did, his Ware-houses.

When they were heated, they went to his Dwelling house, with Intention to make him the Victim of their Revenge, for what they had suffered. They missed him, who had Notice of their Design; but they destroyed all his Furniture, and carried off twelve Thousand Ounces in Plate Utensils.

Hearing *Cordova* was sheltered in the Palace, they surrounded it, and required, he should be delivered up to Justice, as a Plunderer of the Country, and Oppressor of the Poor. They had surprized and disarmed the Guard at the Palace-gate, and had like to have seized the Palace itself, had not the Vice-Roy at the Head of his Servants well armed, driven those out, who had got in, and barred the Gates against them.

By this Time they were got together, to the Number of, at least, five Thousand; in the great Square, firing Balls into the Windows of the Palace; from whence, and from the Leads, many were killed with the Shot of the Besieged.

I happened to have forty Muletiers in and about my Ware-houses and Stables; these I assembled, and having a Cargo by me of Fuzees, Swords and Pistols, Powder and Shot, armed, headed them and gathering, as I went, some of the Vice-Roy's and *Cordova's* Friends, with such as apprehended being plundered, who also armed their Servants, marched into the Square, and fell upon the Rebels Sword in Hand.

My Company consisted of near two hundred Men compleatly armed, and tho' there were several Thousand Mutineers, yet not above four Score of them had Fire-arms, and few, other Weapons than Clubs; so that we found no great Difficulty to open a Passage to the Palace, just as the Mob had brought Fire to burn the Gates.

Here we met with the greatest Resistance, and exchanged several Shot with the Mutineers; but at length drove them before us, their Amunition being spent.

The Vice-Roy's Servants issued out, and seconding us, we soon cleared the Square, and took several Prisoners. The Heads of the Mutiny were discovered next Morning and hanged, to the Number of fourteen, in the Afternoon.

I received two Musket-shot, one thorough my Side, the other in my left Arm, and a

large Cut on my Head, which proved a dangerous Wound, and confined me longest.

The Vice-Roy being informed, to whom he owed his, and possibly, the Preservation of the Kingdom, the *Indians* and *Creolians* bearing an implacable Hatred to the *Castilians*, and in what Condition I was carried to my House, immediately ordered two of the ablest Surgeons, and his own Physician to visit me; but I had been dressed by a skilful Hand before they came.

The next Day his Highness did me the Honour of coming to my House, but my Surgeon saying, it was convenient to leave me, as much as possible, to my Repose, he only enquired after my Health, as he did every Day, by one or other of his Domesticks.

His Highness sent to *la Vera Cruz*, and ordered an Advice-Boat to sail for *Spain*, with all Expedition, with an Account of this Rebellion, charging it on the Archbishop. That Prelate, as haughty as the Vice-Roy, sent on Board the same Boat, a Complaint to Court against his Highness, whom he taxed with insatiable Avarice, which occasioned the Mutiny, by his grinding the Face of the Poor.

In the Vice-Roy's Packet he made honourable Mention of me, attributing the quelling of this Insurrection to my Courage and  
seasonable

reasonable Assistance, recommending me to his Majesty's Favour, who did me the Honour to order the Secretary of State in his Letters to mention me, and enclose a Patent of Nobility.

In the Interim, being well enough recovered to go about my House, and see Company, the Vice-Roy would do me, the second Time, the Honour of a Visit. He said a great many handsome Things, and among others told me, He wished he had judged as prudently, as the Sequel proved I did, when I gave him my Opinion; and concluded, with desiring me to tell him what he could do that might be agreeable to me, and speak the Sense he had of my Service, in granting.

My Lord, replied I, since you will reward my having done the Duty of a loyal Subject, I have one Favour to beg. I grant it, cried he. 'Tis to pardon the unhappy Persons condemned to perpetual Imprisonment for a Design on my Life.

This Request, answered his Highness, is extremely generous in you; but may it not be cruel to yourself, or others, nay, of ill Consequence to them, for whom you make it? I doubt the reclaiming, by an Act of Mercy, Men of so base Alloy, as to intend a private Murder. Consider, their Liberty may prove the Death of some innocent  
and.

and worthy Subject, who may fall under their  
 Resentment:

—I hope, my Lord, replied I, their Con-  
 finement may have given them a different  
 Cast of Mind; and if your Highness thinks  
 I merit a Reward (which I acknowledge great  
 Honour done me) I can ask no other.

Senior *Scipio*, said the Vice-Roy, I cannot  
 break my Word; since you insist upon it, I  
 will send you their Pardon; and, when you  
 please, you may enlarge them, if you think  
 not better on it.

Three Days after his Highness made good  
 his Promise, and I sent an Express to the  
 elder Brother of *Casa-blanca*, to desire he  
 would favour me with a Visit, on an Affair  
 which regarded his Family. Surprized at this  
 Message, he came with my Servant.

When he was conducted to my Chamber,  
 he thus accosted me—Senior, I am ashamed  
 to see you after what my Brother has been  
 guilty of and your generous Intercession,  
 which saved my Family from that Infamy,  
 the Sword of the Executioner would have  
 brought upon it. Tho' innocent of his Crime,  
 which laid him under the just Sentence of  
 the Law, yet would his Stain have fixed  
 one on me and my Posterity: I say, Senior,  
 though I blush to see you, yet I would not  
 delay any Time, having received your Mes-  
 sage, but immediately took Horse, and ac-  
 companied

accompanied your Servant to receive your Com<sup>mands</sup>.

Senior, replied I, I have no Commands; you see I am not in a Condition to wait on you, tho' it is my Duty; wherefore, hoping you would excuse the Liberty, I sent to entreat the Favour of this Visit, with which you are pleased to honour me; that I might convince your unfortunate Brother I did not merit either his Contempt or Hate.

You cannot be a Stranger to the late Tumult in this City—He answered, I am neither ignorant of that, nor of the principal Part you acted in appeasing it. I then told him what is before related, and gave the Pardon into his Hands.

The Gentleman could hardly believe his Ears and Eyes; and, suddenly starting up, cried, Senior! if you expect I should thank you for this transcendent Act of Generosity, you must furnish me with Words; for, I acknowledge, I know not any that can express the Sense I have of it, or give you a Character, which will not be injurious to, by falling vastly short of that you merit.

After some few Compliments were past, he took his Leave, to carry the joyful News of Liberty to those, who had despaired of ever recovering that greatest Blessing of Life.

The next Day, the elder *Casa-blanca* came in the Name of the Penitents, as he termed these

these rash young Gentlemen, to desire I would permit their waiting on me.

I asked, If they had been to pay their Duty and Thanks to the Vice-Roy. He answered, They had ;but his Highness refused to see them, till they had first been to make their Acknowledgments to Senior *Scipio*, to whom alone they were indebted for their Enlargement.

I answered, I should be glad to embrace, and wait on them to his Highness, on Condition they would, instead of returning me Thanks, lay aside their Enmity and consult their own Welfare, by giving his Highness no Cause to repent his Clemency, pursuing a regular Way of Life for the future.

In the Afternoon they paid me a Visit. I stopped them short in their Compliments, by saying, If they thought themselves under any Obligation, they would not proceed in what gave me real Pain. I waited on them to the Vice-Roy, who gave them a severe Repre-  
mand, and very wholesome Advice.

I contracted my Affairs as much as possible, and, as I got in my Money, or had Returns in Merchandize from the Country, sent them to *Spain*, with Orders to my Correspondent to return me no more Goods. I sold off my Mules by degrees, of which *Augustine* took fifty, on nine Months Credit, and

and paid me honestly, at the Expiration of the Term.

While I was thus preparing for my Return, Don *Ricardo Riza*, a very worthy Gentleman, my Friend, to whom I was indebted for the particular Regard and Affection he had shewn me, from my first settling in *Mexico*, fell ill and died in few Days.

His Estate was about three Leagues distant from *Mexico*. This Gentleman was of an hospitable Temper; very generous, but no Oeconomist. His Indolence, in narrowly inspecting his Affairs, added to a strong Propensity to Expence, had compelled him to mortgage his Estate for twenty Thousand Crowns, to a Merchant in the City of *Mexico*, who, having a Mind to purchase it outright at his own Price, made the poor Gentleman very uneasy.

I, perceiving he had something lay heavy on his Spirits, enquired what chagrined him; and, if I could be of any Service in his Affairs, or contribute to his Ease, desiring he would unbofom himself and depend on every thing in my Power. He told me the Scituation of his Affairs. I advanced him the Money to pay off his Mortgage, and took the Security that Person had.

This was about four Years before his Death, and none of the Money or Interest had been paid me to that Day. He left four Daughters,



ters, and his Estate to be equally divided among them, after the Payment of his Debts.

The young Ladies sent for me; on the Loss of their Father, and desired, as I had been his Friend, I would take the Trouble to inspect and settle their Affairs.

I called in all his Creditors, and paid them off; their Demands amounted to four Thousand Crowns. After this I gave publick Notice, with their Consent, that the Estate was to be sold.

Several Purchasers offered themselves, but none came up to more than sixty Thousand Crowns, which the young Ladies were willing to accept of; but, as in my Conscience I knew it ten Thousand Crowns less than the real Value, I bought it myself, and paid them, counting what was due to me, seventy Thousand. This Estate, and my House at *Mexico*, the Bishop's Legacy, I give to my Friend *Don Alphonso Blas*.

Having settled all my Affairs by the Time of the Arrival of our Fleet with a new Vice-Roy, and Commissioners to examine into the late Mutiny, and, besides, satisfied my Ambition, I took Leave of all my Friends, set out for *la Vera Cruz*; embarked on board a prime Sailor, and, without any sinister Accident, arrived safe at *Cales* in thirteen Weeks, from the Time we weighed.

Thus,

Thus, Ladies and Gentlemen, I have given an Account, which, I fear, has been rather tedious than amusing; however, remember it was in Obedience to your Commands.

He received the Thanks of the Company, which assured him his Adventures had been a very agreeable Entertainment.

C H A P. XI.

*Don Sancho falls ill. The Cause and Consequence of his Illness.*

AFTER the Departure of the Countess and her Daughter, who had given a generous Invitation to the whole Company to spend Part of the Summer at her Scite, my Brother began to affect being alone, neglected his Sports, spoke little, and lost his Stomach. This Alteration was perceived by us all; but, as he would not tell the Cause of it, and a Physician, whom my Mother sent for, could not, his Illness gained so much upon him, that it confined him to his Bed in less than a Fortnight. Neither the Concern and Tenderneſs of our Parents, nor the Friendship of Don *Alphonſo* could prevail on him to diſcloſe the ſecret Cause of his Illneſs,

Illness, which was discovered by my Patron, who, with my Mother and self, sitting by his Bed-side, said, that his Friend *Sancho's* Indisposition, if he did not soon recover, would prevent the Pleasure he had flattered himself with, of carrying us all to *Ximenes*, to make the Countess a Visit of a few Days.

At these Words he saw my Brother change Countenance; his languid Eyes seemed to brighten, and sitting up, he said, That his Indisposition depriving Don *Alphonso* of any Satisfaction, would be more afflicting to him, than the Illness he laboured under, which he would struggle with, as much as he possibly could, and hoped a little Time might make an Alteration for the better.

I hope so, replied the Count, endeavour to be chearful; resume your late Gaiety, and the Change of Air, when you can support the Journey, may entirely establish you. The Signal being made for Dinner, we left him with the old Servant who attended in his Chamber.

When we were in the Drawing-room, Madam, said *Alphonso*, don't be grieved at your Son's Illness, the Cause being known, the Remedy is soon found.

My Mother answered, There lay the Difficulty, 'twas that which puzzled the Physicians.

Well,

Well, replied the Count, I have discovered it; your Son is in Love; but whether the Countess or her Daughter has inspired this Passion, which of these is the beloved Object, I can't say; but don't doubt, we shall also get to the Bottom of this Mystery.

He then gave his Reasons for his Opinion, and the Company agreed that he had rightly conjectured.

You *Alphonso*, continued he, endeavour to inform yourself, whether I am well grounded in the Judgment I make. I fear I am, and am sorry for it, as the young Countess is a Fortune of two and thirty Thousand Crowns yearly Revenue; and her Mother extremely difficult, with regard to Family, they never having made a Mis-alliance. However, if Love is the Ground of our Friend's Illness; we must endeavour his Recovery by Hopes; and if we can find none to gain him the Possession of his Fair, Time and Reason must effect his Cure, by getting the better of his Passion.

My Patron then gave us the Account of the young Lady's Family, which I have already mentioned. After Dinner, on our retiring into the Drawing-room, my Father and Don *Scipio* took a Turn in the Garden, and did not join the Company, till they were sat down to Cards.

When

When my Father came in, I took him aside, and told him the Count's Sentiments on my Brother's Illness, and the Reasons he had given for them.

Come, said he, you and I will make the poor Lad a Visit, and try to get the Secret from him.

We accordingly went; he seemed somewhat more chearful, and thanked us for the Favour.

Take Courage, *Sancho*, said my Father; I thought you had had more Spirit, than to be cast down with a slight Indisposition.

I fancy, Sir, replied I, we have made Choice of a Physician of the wrong Sex; I believe there is a certain fair Lady, who lives in the Neighbourhood of *Xativa*, could effect his Cure sooner than the whole Faculty.

Is it so, *Sancho*, said my Father? Sir, replied he, I have been brought up with such Veneration for Truth, that I must be guilty of either the greatest ill Manners and Ingratitude by keeping Silence, or must acknowledge my Brother has judged right. Yes, Sir, I have found the Charms of the young Countess of *Ximenes* as irresistible, as the Obstacles to my Passion are insurmountable.

The Inequality of our Birth (pardon me, Sir) makes me despair of ever possessing the lovely Object of my Desires, and the Violence of that Love, she has inspired is too strong

strong for the Efforts of my Reason to overcome.

I hope, answered Don *Blas*, the Obstacle you mention may be removed with less Difficulty, than you have figured to yourself. Look back into the Origin of all Families, even the greatest, and we shall find the Leather-breeches; and that 'tis Virtue only which ennobles.

Sir, answered my Brother, Reason does not guide the World. The Posterity of great Men are less proud of the Virtues, than of the Titles they procured, as is evident by few practising the former, and the major Part being puffed up with and vain of the latter. The Man of Merit meanly born will never, among the Nobility, be allowed to stand in Competition with the Fool or Profligate who can reckon up a long Train of Ancestors dignified by Titles and Posts of Honour: But, alas! Sir, I am not even upon that Foot: What Merit can I lay Claim to?

Once more I advise you to take Courage, said my Father, depend on me, this grand Obstacle shall vanish; and, if there is no other more difficult to overcome, you may promise yourself the Possession of the Fair for whom you languish. 'Tis not now proper to be more explicite, endeavour to recover your Health; when I see that established, I will demonstrate to you, that these are not  
vain

vain Hopes. What to one seems impossible to be accomplished, to another may appear extremely easy.

Brother, said I, you know so well my Father's Probity, that, I think, you have no Ground to doubt the Performance of his Promise. I am satisfied, he would not positively assert, if he was not as sure he could perform.

If my Father's Tendernefs does not deceive him, replied *Sancho*, and make him think that feasible which——No, no, said Don *Blas*, I have solid Grounds for what I have advanced : Set your Mind at Ease ; rely upon my Knowledge, Experience and Veracity. As soon as you are fit to take the Journey, we will make a Visit to the Countess and, I answer for it, she shall, with Pleasure, put her Daughter into your Arms.

To-morrow I go to *Lirias*, but shall return on the third Day ; if then your Health permits you to come down Stairs, at the same Time that I convince, I will surprize and please you. Tho' I acknowledge, it is the Condition, in which you now are, could alone extort a Secret from me, that I have hitherto concealed from your Mother, and all the World. But too much Talk may hurt you ; *Alphonso* and I will set down, and play a Game at *Piquet* ; the Looking-on may amuse you.

I fetched Cards, and we played several Parties, but my Thoughts were so busied in conjecturing what my Father could mean by the Discourse he had made my Brother, that it was impossible for me to mind my Game, and my Mistakes afforded *Sancho*, who seemed animated by what he had heard, not a little Mirth.

We played 'till Candle-lighting, when *Don Blas* bidding *Sancho* to be of good Chear, we wished him a refreshing Sleep, and went into the Parlour to the rest of the Company. He told *Don Alphonso* the Confession *Sancho* had made of his being enamoured with the young Countess; adding, that *Alphonso* had hit upon the Cause of the sick Man's Distemper. That he, my Father had made a Promise to my Brother, and to be able to perform it, would the next Morning set out for *Lirias*; desired they would suspend their Curiosity to know why he had taken this sudden Resolution 'till his Return, which should be on the third Day, and they should then be acquainted with the Reason of his Journey.

Supper was soon after served in, and we spent the rest of the Evening in discoursing on different Subjects 'till Bed-time, and then betook ourselves to our respective Apartments.

The next Morning my Father set out for his own House, and as he had promised re-



turned the third Day, as we were sitting down to Supper.

After we were retired into the Withdrawing-room. Don *Blas* said, that before he came into the Parlour, he had made a Visit to Count *Ximenes*, whom he found so much altered for the better, that he hoped he would the next Day quit his Chamber.

Don *Alphonso* smiled at the Title given my Brother of Count *Ximenes*; and answered, that he wished with all his Heart, his Friend *Sancho* was as sure of the Title as he, the Count, was sure he deserved it.

Miracles, said my Father, are not ceased. I should not, replied the Countess, think his becoming Count *Ximenes* any thing miraculous, since the Title goes with the young Lady to her Husband.

*Sancho* is young, handsome, and well bred; has good Sense; good Nature; Wit and Address: And what Miracle would it be to see a Lady distinguish a Gentleman thus qualified?

But, Madam, answered my Father, they say the Male-line of *Ximenes* is not extinct; and in such Case, whatever Pretension the young Lady may have to the Estate, she has no Right to the Title.

You tell me News somewhat surprizing, answered my Patron; for I have heard from Don *Lorenzo de Velasco*, who is one of the  
the

the Trustees (as Heirs to his Grandfather) to the Deed of Settlement, that 'till the Ex-tinction of the Male-line of *Ximenes*, the Female cannot inherit, and only two hundred thousand Crowns are charged upon the Lands to portion the Girls, should there be few or many. But whence had you your Intelligence?

To-morrow said my Eather, you will see the Count *Ximenes* here. I have brought in my Chaise, authentick Proofs of his De-scent. He is so much my Son's Friend, that to contribute to his Recovery, he will, if he has any Title to the Estate, renounce it in Favour of him and the young Countess, if her Mother accepts of *Sancho* as a Son-in-law.

That is an unparallel'd Act of Friend-ship, replied Don *Juan de Futella*.

There is a Reason, answered my Father, which, when you know it, will abate the Wonder. But he requires that yo. Sir, (speaking to my Uncle) should, when *Sancho* is thus provided for, transfer the Favours you designed him to his Brother.

Oh, replied Don *Juan*, if there were no other Remoras, *Sancho* should soon be happy.

You now know the Ground of my Journey, continued Don *Blas*: To-morrow, two Ad-vocates will be here with the Count, who will confirm what he has promised.

I was not a little delighted with my Brother's good Fortune, abſtractedly from the Benefit it gave me a Proſpect of as Heir to my Uncle's Eſtate, ſhould he die without Iſſue.

The Ladies were very inquiſitive to know where this Count had lain ſo long hid? how it came to paſs that he did not ſooner appear, and put in his Claim both to the Eſtate and Title? where my Father had met with him? how long he had known him? where he lived? what ſort of Man he was? what his Age? had he good Senſe? was he well bred? with a Number of other Queſtions. Don *Blas* replied, he would give them particular Answers to their reſpective Queries; but deſired they would 'till next Day excuſe him.

While the Company was engaged on different Topics, I, who was on Thorns to acquaint my Brother, went directly to his Chamber, and gave him a minute Account of what had paſſed.

He embraced me very tenderly, ſaying, that I had given him new Life, but could not imagine who, or whence this Count *Ximenes* ſhould be, or how acquainted with Don *Blas*, ſince he had never once heard our Father mention his Name; which to him was ſurprizing, as there muſt neceſſarily be a great Intimacy, an uncommon Friendſhip between them, by the generous Offer made: but

but, continued he, To-morrow will, I hope, disclose the Mystery.

Having said this, he returned me Thanks a second Time for my Information, and telling me he was inclined to Sleep, I left him.

The next Morning I found my Brother in the Parlour the first of any ; and, though he was apparently weak, he seemed to be free from his Distemper.

I congratulated him upon it ; he answered, that our Father had proved the best Physician. No, said I, it was Don *Alphonso* who made the first Discovery of the Cause, though Don *Blas* applied the Remedy.

We are born, replied my Brother, to be hourly obliged by that Nobleman ; I wish we may, either of us, have an Opportunity, by some essential Service, however dangerous, to convince him it is, not Blood alone that inspires generous and grateful Sentiments, and that Vertue is as beautiful in the Eyes of some of mean Extraction, as in the noblest born.

We shall see he had the Completion of this Wish, by an Action which spoke Intrepidity, Presence of Mind, and a sincere Affection for our Patron, the generous Don *Alphonso*.

While we were in Discourse, I heard a Bustle in the Hall ; and, looking out of the

Parlour Door, saw a Woman, to Appearance, dead, and very bloody, brought in by Don *Alphonso's* Servants.

We immediately enquired the Meaning of it. One of the Servants told us, that the Woman, pursued by a Man with a drawn *Spado*, ran into the Stables and begged Protection ; that she there fell dead, and that they had secured the Murderer, who called himself her Husband ; that he told them, he had found her in the Embraces of a young Man, whom she clasped very tenderly in her Arms : and that, enraged with the Sight, he had dispatched the Adulterer, as he would have done the Adulterers, had not her Fears given Wings to her Feet, and the Count's House afforded her Refuge.

I ordered the Woman to be carried into a private Room, some Female Servants to be called, to search where her Wound was ; a Lackey to take Horse with all Speed, to bring a Surgeon from *Valencia*, and somebody to run and see, if the Man, supposed to be killed, had any Remains of Life, and might be recovered ; the Murderer, as I was informed, living in the Village, but a hundred Paces distant from the Garden-walls of the Castle of *Leyva*.

What I had ordered, was instantly performed. The Woman, who came to herself in some little Time, though bloody, had

had no Wound, and the young Man was found still alive, but weltering in his Blood on the Floor. Some of the Neighbours being called in by Don *Alphonso's* Servants, searched him, and finding he had received a Wound in his Back, quit thorough the Body, endeavoured, by such Means as they could procure, to staunch his Bleeding, bind him up, and put him to Bed.

Don *Alphonso* and the Ladies came down soon after the Woman had recovered her Senses and hearing she was only terrified, he ordered her to be blooded by one of his Family, who was expert at breathing a Vein, to be put into a warm Bed, some body to attend, and no Questions to be asked her.

As she was led by the Parlour-door, we heard her scream; *Oh! my Son, my Son, Oh! my dear Son! Oh, cruel rash Parent, unhappy passionate Father! Oh! my unfortunate dear Son!*

My Patron, who ordered the Servants to bring the Murderer, on his Appearance, asked him, what Injury could provoke him to so barbarous an Action.

The greatest, replied he, and such as none, but a \* *Cabron* could bear without washing off the Stain with the Blood of the Offenders.

K 4

He

\* *Spanish* Term for a contented Cuckold.

He then told him, that he was a Soldier quartered in *Valencia*; that coming to see his Wife in the Count's Village, he found her careſſing a young Man.

Don *Alphonſo* told him, he muſt ſend him to the Corrigidor of *Valencia*; and ordered his Men to ſecure him, till the Coach could be got ready to carry him.

Soon after this the Surgeon arrived, but the wounded Man was expired. The Murderer was ſent to *Valencia*, and the Counteſs with the other Ladies went to ſee the poor Woman.

She told them, that ſhe had been married thirty Years to, and had one Son by her unhappy Huſband, that this Son, at the Age of fifteen, went with the Galleons to *la Vera Cruz*, and finding Encouragement to ſtay in *América*, had remained there fourteen Years; that he was returned with the Fleet, which but lately arrived; was come to ſee and relieve his Parents, but in return for his filial Piety, found his Death in the Arms of his Mother, and from the Hands of his Father.

The Affliction of this unhappy Woman, with whom our whole Family ſympathized, was too ſtrong for her Reaſon to conquer. She raved two Days and a Night on her Son and Huſband; and expired at the Entrance of the ſecond Night.

The

The unhappy Husband and Father, thrust into Jail, was so thoroughly pierced with Grief, that, in a Rage, he struck his Head against the Wall of his Dungeon with a Violence, which drove his splintered Skull into his Brain, and put an End to his temporary Affliction and Life together.

On the Body of the unhappy young Man was found a Bow-case, in which were Pearls and Emeralds to the Value of ten Thousand Crowns, with ten Gold Quadruples, and seven Pistoles. In his Pockets he had some Pieces of Eight, Reals and double Reals, to the Amount of five Crowns.

Don *Alphonso* took all into his Hands, enquired after, and gave to his nearest Relations this Money in such Proportion, as the Law directs.

## C H A P. XII.

*Which is left to the Option of the Reader to peruse or pass by.*

**T**HIS Accident preventing my Father from answering the Queries, the Ladies had made him the foregoing Night, when Dinner was ended, the Countess desired he would make good his Promise, in satisfying



fyng their Curiosity, and asked if he believed Count *Ximenes* would be at *Leyua* that Day.

My Father said, he was ready to obey her, and that he was certain the Count would have the Honour to sup with her that Night, if neither Sickness, Death, nor any unforeseen Accident hindred him.

I am, said the Countess, curious to see this Gentleman, as the generous Offer of so considerable an Estate is a surprizing Instance of Friendship; and his not assuming a Title he has a Right to, speaks him detached from the World.

Perhaps, said my Aunt, the Count is entered into Religion, and then such a Procedure will be easily accounted for. What you say, my dear, replied Don *Juan*, would rather augment our Wonder; don't imagine, that the Walls of a Convent shut out Pride and Avarice.

Count *Ximenes*, said my Father, is well acquainted with the World, has experienced the Emptiness of what are falsely stiled Pleasures of Life; knows how little Confidence is to be placed in Man; and that, even in Princes, the Wise will put no Trust. He looks upon Respect as Grimace, and laughs at Titles, which add nothing to the intrinsic Value of such as bear them: He will tell you, that the present Life is short and precarious;

carious; that a Man who can be anxious about it, must be void of Prudence: The Vicissitudes of humane Affairs such, that the Man who adds to the Troubles inseparable to Life, the superfluous Care of raising a Family, or perpetuating a Name, ought to be sent to *Bedlam*, since we see the greatest Empires and Monarchies overthrown, and Nations extinct, leaving only a Name to shew the Folly of depending on human Policy or Power.

Where, he will ask, are the once Lords of the then known World, the *Romans*, whose Ambition could be bounded by the Limits of the Earth alone?

Let us look at Home, and we shall find one Battle transfer *Spain* from the Dominion of the *Goths*, who had enjoyed it two hundred and Ninety seven Years, to that of the *Moors*; nay, that one decisive Battle, fought in the Year seven hundred and fourteen, entirely effaced the *Gothic* Nation; for never since have they had any Government, which bore their Name: and this People, who had been so famous in the East and West, as far back, as the History of any Nation can be traced; This People, who triumphed over *Cyrus the Great* and all *Asia*; who had subjected many and powerful Kingdoms; who made Head against *Alexander the Great*, wasted the Countries of his Conquests, and had

taken Prisoner a King, one of his Successors ; this People, who had trampled under Foot the Majesty of the *Roman* Empire ; vanquished Emperors, great Generals, and redoubtable Armies ; who had reduced to their Subjection so many Cities in *Italy* ; and even Imperial *Rome* itself, which they plundered ; who had seized on the richest and most populous Provinces of the West ; where they had prosperously ruled such a Number of Years, with such exemplary Piety, Justice and distinguished Bravery ; this gallant People, in one only Day, were reduced to a bare Name, and ceased to be.

- As for Birth, the Count will tell you, as 'tis not the Effect of Merit, but merely fortuitous, on the one Hand it ought to cause no Honour to the Vicious, and on the other it ought not, if mean, to depreciate the Virtuous.

As for Titles, he knows none so great, as that of a good Christian ; since that will make the Man happy who really deserves it, which cannot be said of the most magnificent, whether of King, Emperor or Pope.

In a Word, he esteems the Man who can subdue his own Passions a greater Conqueror, than he who over-runs a Kingdom. The Extent of his Ambition is, now, to live like

\* *Lyfimachus*.

a rational Creature, by which he understands to despise what is transitory and precarious; and secure to himself the permanent and solid.

You are describing to us a thorough Philosopher; and a primitive Christian, answered Don *Alphonso*; 'twill be hard to find his Fellow.

Yet, replied my Father, he acknowledges, that the Example of your Life shamed him out of his Vanities; enabled him to get the Mastery of his Passion, and gave Strength to his Weakness; he admires, loves, and copies after Don *Alphonso*. What I have said, Ladies, which suppose from the Count's own Mouth, answers most of your Questions. I think, when I tell you, that I became acquainted with Count *Ximenes* about twelve Years ago, in *Madrid*, I have thoroughly satisfied your Curiosity.

You seem to hint, that I know this Gentleman, by the Compliment you have made me in his Name, said Don *Alphonso*.

You honour him with your Friendship, replied my Father, which he esteems more than any the King can confer upon him.

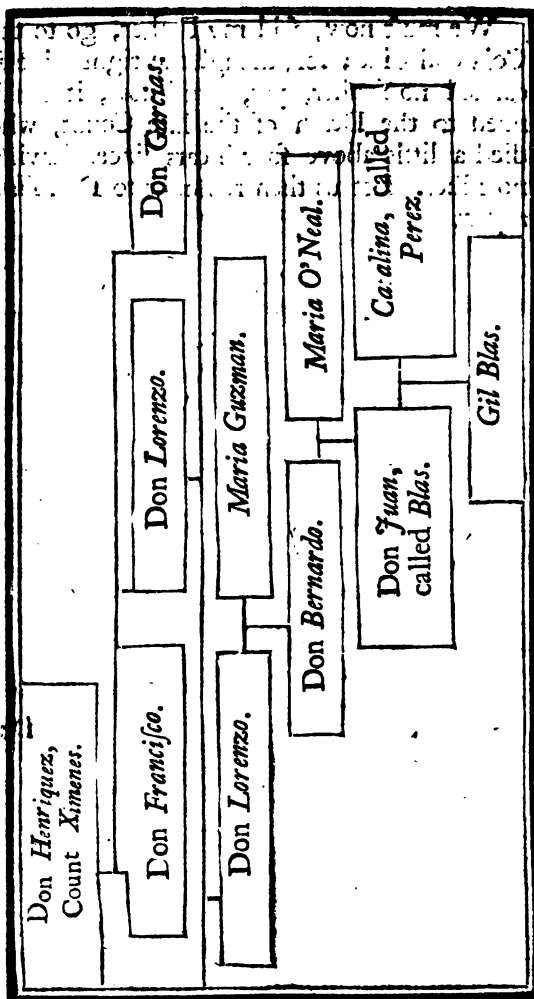
If you please, we will now cast an Eye over his Genealogy. He then opened a Part of a Parchment Roll, which was as thick as the Small of a Lady's Waist. It began five Hundred and sixteen Years before the Incarnation,

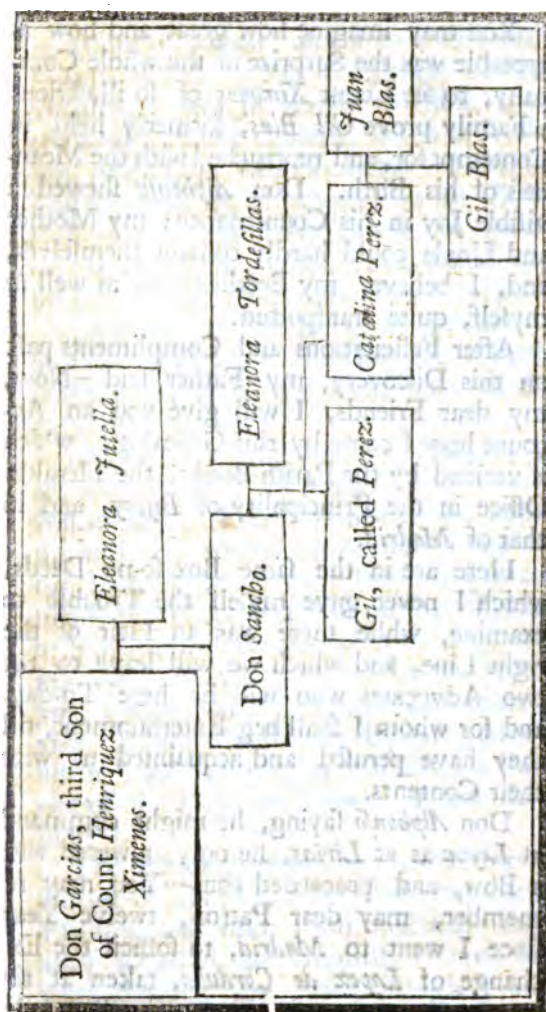
nation, at the Time the *Carthaginians*, whom the *Phoenicians* had called to their Assistance, being fore pressed by the *Andalusians* (then called *Beticians*) made a Descent in *Spain*, under the Conduct of *Mabermal*. At the Head of this Genealogy was *Baccius Capetus*, whose eldest Son was named *Siculus*, his eldest Son *Ramirus*, who commanded the *Spaniards*, and opposed *Mabermal*. We looked cursorily over these ancient Names, and they lead us, by a lineal Descent, to Don *Gorria*, Lord of *Ximenes*, slain in the Battle against the *Moor*s, in the Year one Thousand three hundred and forty, when the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, with only one hundred and forty Thousand Horse, and twenty-five Thousand Foot, attacked seventy Thousand *Moorish* Horse, and three hundred Thousand Foot; gained a complete Victory, slew two hundred Thousand, took four Wives and three Sons of the *Moor*s King, and an incredible Treasure in Gold and Silver.

The eldest Son of *Gorria* was named Don *Mmanuel*, Count of *Ximenes*. We found this Title continue in the lineal Descent, till we came to Don *Henriquez*, Grandson to Don *Henriquez*, born in the Year one Thousand five hundred seventy four, in the Reign of *Henry the IVth*.

We must now, said my Father, go to the Colateral Line; for, though the right Line is carried no farther, yet, you know, it continued to the Death of the late Count, who died a little above four Years since, leaving no Issue. Let us then remount to Don Henriquez,

Don







You may imagine how great and how agreeable was the Surprize of the whole Company, to see Count *Ximenes* of so illustrious a Family prove *Gil Blas*, formerly held in Contempt, and reproached with the Meanness of his Birth. Don *Alphonso* shewed a violent Joy in his Countenance; my Mother and Uncle could hardly contain themselves, and I believe, my Brother was, as well as myself, quite transported.

After Felicitations and Compliments past on the Discovery, my Father said—Now, my dear Friends, I will give you an Account how I came by this Genealogy, which is taken from the Parish-Books, the Herald's Office in the Principality of *Biscay*, and in some *Manuscripts*.

There are in the same Box some Deeds, which have given myself the Trouble to transcribe, and which we will leave to the Historians who will be here To-day, to give you a full and entertaining, till we are again acquainted us with

the same thing, as might command  
 me, and I only answered with  
 the same words—You may re-  
 member that I was twelve Year  
 old when I was taken at the Ex-  
 plosion, and was taken at the  
 Surrender

Surrender of *Venans*, and then a Prisoner in *France*; which, as that Gentleman was your Relation, I was so zealous to effect, that I procured a *French* Colonel, taken at *St Guil- lian*, when Don *John* of *Austria* reduced that Town, to be set at Liberty, on his Parole, that, either Don *Lopez* should be released on his Return to *France*, or he would come back, and again surrender himself Prisoner.

As I was one Day going to the Secretary of War's Office on this Business, a Person, making Signs to my Coachman to stop, came towards me.

If I mistake not, said this Stranger, you are Don *Gil Blas*. I replied, you have my Name right. Then, continued he, appoint me an Hour, when I may entertain you without Interruption; I have something to communicate, which you will not be displeased to hear; and I have also some Writings to put into your Hands, as the Character given of you, speaks you a different Man from the vain, unnatural and fancy Upstart you were, when I last saw you in this City, a Favourite of the Duke of *Lerma*. Where do you lodge?

The Bluntness of this Man, who drew the Picture of what I had been, without the least Flattery, and who, I was conscious, had exactly followed the Original, I own somewhat shocked me; and, though I endea-

voured to call him to mind, it was to no Purpose.

While I was examining the Lines of his Face, he again asked me where I lodged? I told him; and added, that, if he would favour me with a Visit next Morning, I would be at Home to none else, and desired he would let me know his Name, that I might acquaint my Servant, he was the Person excepted in my Order to be denied.

My Name, said he, is *Bernardo Muscada*, Son of the Grocer who lived at *Oviedo*; To-morrow I will be with you: and, without adding another Word, he went off.

I immediately remembred I had given just Grounds for the disagreeable, but just Colours in which he had painted me; for the Liberty he had taken to reproach me, at the Time he mentioned, made me turn him out of my Closet in a very impolite Manner.

The next Morning pretty early, my Servant told me, *Muscada* was below. I ordered him to be conducted up, and to make amends for the former unmannerly Reception he had met with, I received him at the half Space of the Stairs, made him enter the Room first, placed him in a great-armed Chair, ordered some Chocolate, and again, in his hearing, enjoined my being denied to every

one of whatever Rank, while that Gentleman was with me.

When the Servant was gone, Senior *Muscada* accosted me in these Words - I am come, Don *Gil Blas* ; for I am not ignorant the King, who is the Fountain of Honour, has given you a Right to the Title of *Don*, which his Majesty would not have done, had he known you, I am come, I say, to let you know yourself.

This Exordium made me endeavour to run over the Life I had led for some Years past, to discover in what Action I had betrayed any Signs of that Vanity, of which, I acknowledge, intoxicated with Prosperity, I was formerly ridiculously guilty.

Tho' I could not recall any one Instance, I resolved to give this Cynic (as I esteemed him) a patient Hearing, and disappoint the Malice of his Design, if he came, as I imagined, to insult and provoke me ; wherefore I very calmly answered, If his Information was the Effect of his Humanity, he would deserve my Thanks and Friendship ; if it proceeded from a Resentment of my former foolish and unwarranted Treatment of him, still I would hear him with Calmness, as I was the Aggressor ; and if Contempt, Envy, or his own Vanity was the Motive, I could forgive, and laugh at it : wherefore, tho' I hoped I did not want the Instruction he offered,

forced, he might proceed with full Liberty, and fear no Interruption.

He answered, You'll judge of my Motives by my Discourse.

Your Father, Senior, came to our Town of *Quiedo*, a Boy about twelve Years old; he was taken from the Hospital of Orphans in *Sebastian*, by a Horse-Courser, and had been sent thither from that of *Estella*.

This my Grandfather was informed of by his Master, who was our Townsman, and very intimate in our Family. With this Jockey he lived as Groom, till he was twenty Years old. (I must acquaint you, tho' possibly it may be useless, that when any Orphans are received into the Hospital, the Governors give them new Names; and from those of *Estella*, your Father received that of *Blas*, which he transmitted to you). But to go on: At the Age of twenty, he, your Father, was pressed into the King's Service, and sent to *Flanders*, where he remained seven Years under the Command, and in the Regiment of *Alexander Farnase*, Prince of *Parma*.

The King, resenting the *Arragonians* having rescued *Anthony Perez*, a disgraced Favourite, late Secretary of State, and first Minister who had escaped from his Confinement, and was retaken in *Arragon*, sent Don *Alphonso de Vargas* (to chastise them) with some chosen Troops. Your Father was in this Draught; and

and, on Account of his Bravery, after the Kingdom was reduced to a most deplorable Condition, he was indulged with his Discharge from the Service, and a Promise of a Halbard, if he would again take on.

He returned to *Oviedo*, where he found his Master almost in the Agonies of Death, and my Grandfather by his Bed-side.

The Horse-courser rejoiced to see *Blas*, for whom he had an Affection, return in Safety, after so long an Absence and having heard nothing from him. He clasped him in his Arms, and said—I am heartily glad to see you, I did not forget you, when I made my Will; for I therein have left you two hundred Pistoles, if you should again appear at *Oviedo*, or could be found within the Space of ten Years after my Decease. I have also declared from whence I took you into my Service upon my Oath, which I caused to be registred. I will now send for a Notary, and acknowledge you the identical Person I formerly received from the Orphan-house in *Sebastian*, which I desire my Friend *Masruda* will also see registered; I leave him my Executor. Do you, for it may one Day be of Service to yourself or your Children, get your Acquaintance in this Town to make a formal Recognition of you, and register your Discharge from the Service, as I suppose you have one.

I have this farther Advice to give you, which is, to go with these Certificates to *Sebastian*, and get one from the Governors of the Orphans in that Town, to those of *Estella*, that you are the Person sent to them from thence, and afterwards taken by me to *Oviedo*.

Your Father expressed his Gratitude more by Tears, than Words.

Few Days after the Horse-courser died, and my Grandfather paid *Blas* his Legacy, advising him, for his own and the Sake of his Posterity, to comply with the Advice of his deceased Master, which he did with Regard to the Certificates, but neglected going to *Sebastian* that Year.

He took up the Business of Horse-courfing; and as he was bred under an understanding Dealer, and himself understood the Business, he was in a thriving Way.

He left *Oviedo* the following Year, when he was eight and twenty Years old. His Business, as he attended the Fairs, led him to *Sebastian*, where he did what his Master had advised him; and from thence, with the Certificate procured from the Governors of the Orphans of that Town, he went to *Estella*, and obtained another of his having been received into that Hospital at the Age of eight; and by them sent, under the Name of *Blas*; (though his real Name was *Ximenes*, the Son  
of

of *Bernardo*, in the Neighbourhood of *Estella*) to *Sebastian*.

From *Estella* he went to *Logrona*, on the River *Ebro*.

At the Inn where he lodged, he saw a Servant Maid, for whom he took an uncommon Affection.

He staid there three Days; but finding no Chapmen to his Mind, designing for the Fair of *Saragossa*, sent his String of Horses, with a Man and two Boys before him, to *Taragona*.

He was so enamoured of this Maid, that he resolved to marry her, if she would accept him for a Husband.

This his Intention he imparted to his Landlord and Landlady, who gave her the Character of a viruous and faithful Servant; and thinking this Proposal very advantageous, sent for, and communicated to her what were your Father's Intentions.

She modestly answered, That she had no Objection to his Person, and should be glad of a Settlement, by which she might be less a Slave, than now the Hurry of an Inn would allow her to be: but that she could conclude nothing, without her Brother's Consent, who was a Priest at *Segura*.

As your Father could not trust the Care of his Horses to Servants, it was concluded to write to the Brother, which the Landlord

L undertook



undertook to do, and *Blas* agreed to return after the Fair of *Saragossa* was over.

He had the good Fortune to dispose of all his Horses, except that he rode, to Advantage; which he had no sooner done, but, discharging the Servants hired to assist him, made the best of his Way to *Logrona*.

The next Day arrived the Maid's Brother, your Uncle, the Canon *Gil Perez*.

He approved of your Father's Circumstances, but said he could not consent to the marrying his Sister to any, but a *Cristiano viejo*. \*

It is impossible for me, answered *Blas*, to tell you more of myself than I know, without Fiction; and though I really have an uncommon Tenderness for your Sister, yet I have a greater Veneration for Truth, and will not obtain her by a Falstity.

I admire your Sincerity, replied the little Canon, but cannot alter my Resolution, and flatter myself my Sister will do nothing without my Approbation. She is, 'tis true, a poor Servant, and I a necessitous Priest, whose mean Education won't admit the Hopes of being ever other; but still we are not, tho' so low, sprung from the Dregs of the People. The Changes in worldly Affairs are such, that  
*Seneca*

\* One who had no Mixture of Moorish or Jewish Blood in his Descent.

*Seneca* rightly observes ; *There is not a Prince but is derived from a Slave, or a Slave but descended from a Prince.* It favours of Vanity to say more.

Your Father, concerned at this Answer, said, As you live at *Segura*, 'tis possible you may know more of my Descent than I do myself: I was born in the Neighbourhood of *Eskella*, not far distant from you, and am the Son of *Bernardo Ximenes* ; this is but lately come to my Knowledge, and more I know not.

If you are rightly informed, replied *Gil Perez*, you cannot marry my Sister without a Dispensation ; you are the Son of our Uncle.

See, said *Blas*, what my Reasons are for believing that I am not deceived, putting his Certificates into the Hands of *Perez*.

The Canon, having attentively examined both them and the Person, said, The Age you seem to be of, exactly corresponds with these Papers, and I am convinced you are the Son of my Uncle, immediately embraced him ; and calling his Sister, told her, That instead of a Husband she had (next to himself) found the nearest Relation she had in the World.

*Blas* told the Priest, whatever Honour it might be, he could not help grieving to find

himself his Kinsman in so near a Degree, since he could never be happy without his Sister.

Let not that trouble you, replied *Perez*, if you can spare the Money, I will undertake for the procuring a Dispensation. *Blas* said, he would willingly part with all he had, rather than lose the only Woman he ever had distinguished from the rest of the Sex.

They supped with the Landlord that Night, when it was concluded, That *Gil Perez* should take his Sister to *Segura*, and lose no Time in soliciting a Dispensation in their real, not imposed Names; and, for the Sake of Posterity, that *Perez* should take and register in the Herald's-Office the beforementioned Certificates; that *Blas* should return to *Oviedo*, to look after his Affairs, and upon obtaining the Dispensation, *Perez* promised to join him there with his Sister, to consummate the Marriage. To perform all this, and to cloath the future Bride, your Father gave the Priest fifty Pistoles, which he said would be sufficient.

The next Day they parted with Demonstrations of great Tenderness, and took their different Roads.

Two Months after, *Perez* and his Sister arrived at *Oviedo*; but *Blas* being then at *Leon*, fortyeight Miles distant, they went thither, and the Lovers were there married (to conceal the Dispensation), and at their  
Return,

Return to *Oviedo*, declared their being Man and Wife, shewing the Curate of the Parish the Certificate of the Priest who had performed the Ceremony.

I had, continued *Muscada*, like to have omitted a material Circumstance, which was, *Perez* consenting to the Marriage upon Condition, that your Father should continue the Name of *Blas*, and make no Mention of that of his Family, the publishing of which could be of no Service in the Circumstances they were then in, and might bring the Displeasure of their Relations upon them, who, thinking themselves dishonoured, might at least report them Impostors; adding, that it was sufficient, he could authentically prove their Descent, whenever it would be of Advantage.

*Muscada* here made a short Pause. I told him I had hitherto been, I found, in an Error, as I always thought my Father a Native of *Oviedo*. I have written the History of my Life, and have left Orders in my Will, which I have made, for its being published after my Decease, and have in that spoke him as born in that Town, but will mend the Mistake, when I revile my Work; which if you live

to see, you will acknowledge, I hope, that I am an impartial, and not a vain Writer. \*

To proceed, Senior, continued my Visitor, your Uncle staid at *Oviedo* some little Time with your Parents, and on his Return was charged with a Commission to the Bishop of the Diocese, by the Nuns of the *Holy Sepulchre*, in which he shewed such Zeal and Diligence, taking the Pains to acquaint them in Person with his Success, that, in Gratitude, they procured him the Benefice he enjoyed to his Death, worth double that he quitted at *Sagua*.

I was told, said I, that it was the Interest of those Nuns procured him the Priesthood, without passing any Examination, which he was too ignorant to go through.

Senior Don *Gil*, replied *Muscada*, shew me the Man without Enemies. Your Uncle was not a Man of Learning, but not so destitute of Literature, as you say he was represented; besides, he was in Priest's Orders, when he first came to *Oviedo*. What I say, I have from Notes written by my Grandfather, intimate Friend of the Canon *Perez*.

I

\* No doubt my Father never revised his Work, or forgot to correct the Error here mentioned, since it is transmitted to the Press, and continued in every Impression.

I have then, said I, another Mistake to rectify † in the Manuscript of my Life.

*Muscada*, proceeding, said, this Benefice was a great Succour to your Mother. *Gil Perez* was a pious Christian, a humane and charitable Man; a sincere Friend, a kind Neighbour, a good Paymaster; patient of Wrongs, peaceable in his Nature, than which none was ever known among Men more inoffensive, sparing with Regard to himself, liberal and hospitable to others, bearing Part in the Sorrows of the Afflicted: ready to comfort and assist the Oppressed; pierced with the Cold of the Naked, affected with the Wants of the Hungry, and a constant Visiter of the sick and needy Prisoners, with whom he shared Part of his Bread.

This Priest in his Life, which was a Reproach to the much greater Part of the Clergy, luxurious, proud, litigious, unforgiving, uncharitable, vain, covetous, lewd, envious, depreciating of others, self-sufficient, ambitious, trading; making a Gain of that Religion which they deny in their Practice, careless of the Souls under their Cure, and intent only on their Profit, to indulge to their irregular and unchecked Passions: *Gil Perez*, I say, the Reproach of such, was besides a most tender Brother, and to the utmost of his

L 4

Power,

† This Fault has also escaped my Father's Animadversion, if he reviewed his Papers.

Power supported his Sister and yourself in your Father's Misfortunes, till she, loath and ashamed, to be so heavy a Burthen upon the good Man, got a Service.

Bless me, said I, if my Uncle *Perez* was the Man you speak him, I have had an Account very injurious to his Character; and have accordingly wronged him, by setting the good Man down a very Epicure, in the Life of *Gil Blas*, which I intend for the Publick, but I will do him Justice. \*

Pray do, replied *Muscada*, 'tis a Cruelty not to be pardoned in an Author, to venture to characterize the Dead by Hear-say.

If those who write for the Public would consider how severely they may hereafter suffer for their Indolence in this Point, or were they on the one hand Proof against Bribes, and on the other divested of Prejudice, Posterity might know the real Characters of those who lived before them; had former Authors been unbyassed, we might perhaps now esteem him a true Patriot, who is stigmatized in History as a Traitor to, and a Plunderer of his Country; while he, who is transmitted to us as a political Saviour of his Nation, we should read a Man of a narrow and limited

\* This Correction being omitted, is to me and, I believe, will be allowed by the Reader a Proof that *Gil Blas* forgot, or had not Leisure to re-examine his Life which is published.

mitted Genius, whose Policy was bounded by Bribery and Corruption ; who had no Expedient, on an Emergency, to extricate himself, but to squander the Treasure, and sacrifice the Trade of his Fellow Subjects ; regardless of the Glory of the Kingdom, suffering the greatest Insults on the Nation ; pocketing the most flagrant Wrongs done to the Public ; making it a Victim to the Honour and Profit of his Post ; intent only on enriching and building up his own worthless Family upon the Ruin of Millions, and suffering to be ravished from, all that is dear to, a People.

Sir, said I, your Reflection is very just ; few Authors have Vertue to be impartial, and as few the Means to transmit authentic Relations of Matters of Fact, with Regard to what passes in the Cabinet of Princes.

They, who are at the Head of public Affairs, wind up or relax the hidden Springs by which the great Machine of State is moved and directed, would not be fit for the Employment, were they not secret as the Grave ; such have little Time, perhaps no Inclination to inform Posterity and did they, could we expect Impartiality from such Authors ?

Historians can only guess at Causes by Effects, and give their and the Sentiments of those who wrote before them, or the Opinions of foreign Writers.



This Want of Intelligence, necessary to a public Writer, keeps them in the Dark, with Regard to the real Character of a Prime Minister.

Success, tho' owing to mere Accident, shall be attributed to him as the Result of consummate Prudence and Vigilance; and a Misfortune which he had foreseen impending; guarded against with all possible Care, and endeavoured to prevent by every probable Mean, shall be charged to the Account of his Incapacity or Indolence.

This is verified in the Ministry of the late Count-Duke. He foresaw, and endeavoured to prevent the Loss of *Portugal*. He would have removed *Vasconcellos*, to whose ill Conduct ought justly to have been attributed the Loss of that Kingdom; but the Rebellion in *Catalonia*, having lessened the King's Confidence in his Minister, *Vasconcellos*, was supported by the Dutchess of *Mantua*, Vice-Queen of *Portugal*, influencing the Queen (Enemy to the Count-Duke) in his Favour.

When Count *Olivarez* found he had miscarried in that Point, he declared in Council That he foresaw the Loss of that Kingdom, and with it his own Disgrace; however he took all the Methods human Prudence could suggest to prevent both.

He sent a Commission to the Duke of *Braganza*, which, tho' it carried the Face of Honour

nour done, was indeed a Snare to entrap him.

This Commission made it necessary for him to visit all the Fortresses of *Portugal*, and to order such as were not, to be put in good Condition.

At the same Time Orders were sent to the respective Governors to seize, with as little Noise as possible, and send the Duke to *Spain*, on the Frontiers of which were Coaches and Guards to receive, and Relays of Mules upon the Roads to hurry him, to *Madrid*.

The Count-Duke sent Instructions to all the Magistrates and Officers in that Kingdom how to behave; to watch the Duke narrowly, and to send daily Informations of his minutest Actions.

The Duke on the other hand, as wary as the Count-Duke was vigilant, executed the Commission sent him; but with such a numerous Retinue well armed, that he rendered the Minister's Design, which he saw through, impracticable.

The Count-Duke observing this Precaution of *Braganza's*, was the more alarmed, and endeavoured to wheedle him and the Prime Nobility of *Portugal* to the Court of *Spain*, with the strongest Professions of his Majesty's Intention to do them Honour, and of his own Respect and Veneration for the Duke in particular, and of his  
Regard

Regard and Esteem for the *Portuguese* Nation in general; but the circumspect Duke, answering his Letters with the same Dissimulation, returned his most dutiful Thanks for his Majesty's gracious Intentions, acknowledged the great Obligations he owed the Count-Duke, to whom he ascribed the King's Goodness, and promised to throw himself in few Days at his Majesty's Feet.

Indeed the Duke ordered a splendid Equipage to be got ready for his going to the Court of *Madrid*, as did several of the *Portuguese* Nobility, and behaved in such a Manner, that the Count Duke at first flattered himself, that he had swallowed the Bait; but the Excuses the Duke daily sent to procrastinate his Journey undeceived him, and the Election of the whole Kingdom of *Portugal* made good his Prediction: however, though the King's Favour towards him visibly declined, he was not immediately disgraced.

These Reflections, said *Muscada*, have broken the Thread of my Story, which, if you please, I will resume.

You were born about the thirtieth Year of your Father's Age, in one Thousand five hundred and ninety four; that Year was remarkable for the Murrian among Cattle, and a Distemper till then unknown, which was fatal to Horses in particular. Your Father, had at that Time a Number on his Hands, which

which were swept off, and the Loss entirely ruined him.

Being thus reduced, he thought of the Promise made him of a Halbard, and resolved to return to the Army. This Resolution taken, the Canon promised to provide for your Mother and yourself, till he should be able to do it at his Return.

Accordingly *Blas* set out in Search of his former Officer; but he being dead, and himself in great Necessity, enlisted as a common Foot-Soldier, and was sent with other Recruits to *Flanders*: The King making Peace with *France* in the Year one Thousand five hundred and ninety eight, his Regiment was sent to the *Low-Countries*, where your Father, having been wounded, was with others disbanded, and, as Reward for their Service, left to get home as they could.

He returned to *Oviedo*, after an Absence of seven Years; and, finding you in the Care of your Uncle, and your Mother in the Service of a good Family, where she was well provided for, he offered himself, and was accepted as an Hostler in the best Inn of the Town.

Having now brought the History of your Family to a Period, where you need no farther Information, I shall pass over what you know, to acquaint you with what you are as yet ignorant of.

Your

Your Uncle and my Grandfather were, as I have said, very intimate, and at the Decease of the latter, the good Canon transferred his Friendship to my Father, who was the only one, whom he particularly distinguished of all the Inhabitants of *Oviedo*, to the last Day of his Life that, before his Death he sent for, and held him the following Discourse.

‘ My dear *Bertrand*, I am now going to pay the Debt of Nature; I have at length reached the Goal for which we all set out at our Birth. I am not sorry that I have existed, because it was the good Will of my Creator: I never repined at any Hardships I met with in Life, or at the mean Figure I have made in it; for God, who is infinitely merciful and wise, saw this low Station best for me; and I am so far from grieving at my approaching Dissolution, that it is to me a Subject of rejoicing. I quit a noisy Inn, where I am but indifferently treated, to settle in a Mansion of eternal Rest and Peace, where no Cares can gain Admittance.

‘ I have been a great Sinner, Subject to Passion and other human Frailties; but, thank my God, I never, to my Knowledge, wronged any Person in Property, or Character. I trust in the Mercies of God, and the Merits of my Saviour, for

‘ a

‘ a Remission of my Sins, as I heartily forgive all who have either actually or intentionally injured me.

‘ I now sent for you to communicate an Affair of some Delicacy, which I entrust to the Conduct of your Prudence.’

Here my Father was interrupted by a Servant, who acquainted him, that two Gentlemen, in a Coach drawn by four Mules, enquired for him; he immediately went to receive and conduct them in. They were the two Advocates.

### C H A P. XIII.

*Continuation of Muscada's Narrative.  
The Right of Gil Blas to the Estate of  
Ximenes, discovered.*

**D**ON *Alphonso* received them with great Respect, as they were Gentlemen known to him, and eminent in their Profession.

After having reposed themselves some little Time, one of these Counsellors asked Don *Gil Blas* in what they could be serviceable to him; for the Letter, in which he had required

quired their coming to *Leyva*, was couched in general Terms, with Regard to Business.

My Father replied, the Day was too far spend to enter upon any ; but next Morning he should lay some Writings before them, and request the Favour of their Opinion. After this the Conversation turned on various Subjects.

The next Day, Breakfast being over, my Father withdrew with the two Counsellors, and having given his Writings into their Hands, returned. The Countess immediately desired him to go on with the Narrative he had begun the preceding Day, which he did as follows. The good Priest thus proceeded.

‘ Though every one knows our Birth is  
 ‘ not in our Option, yet almost every one  
 ‘ desires the World should think them de-  
 ‘ scended from distinguished Parents, how-  
 ‘ ever depressed in their Circumstances. I am  
 ‘ an Exception to this almost general Inclina-  
 ‘ tion ; for Men, in my Opinion, judge  
 ‘ wrong, in thinking that being derived  
 ‘ from a noble Stock will enforce Respect :  
 ‘ on the contrary, when a Beggar boasts the  
 ‘ Lustre and Antiquity of his Family, far  
 ‘ from acquiring him Respect (however well  
 ‘ he may be grounded in what he advances)  
 ‘ it has an Effect quite contrary ; it makes  
 ‘ him the Object of Contempt and Ridicule ;  
 ‘ he is laughed at for his Vanity ; but these  
 the’

the infallible Consequences of a poor Man's  
vaunting of his Ancestors, will not cure the  
*Weak*, intoxicated with the Figure their  
Fore-fathers had made in the World. They  
do not profit by the Example of others;  
nay, neither will they, perceiving themselves  
become a Jest to their Acquaintance, re-  
dress this failing.

Where an illustrious Birth is supported  
by a large Estate, it causes Respect: But the  
needy Nobility are as certainly, by such as  
envy and are inwardly angry at their pre-  
ceding them, heartily despised; tis an  
Amends the Wealthy and Meanly-born  
make themselves.

A poor Lord is a standing Jest, and the  
incessant Subject of a substantial Citizen's  
Ridicule. As what I now say, my dear  
*Bertrand*, is the Result of long Observa-  
tion, I have not only overcome my own,  
but the Vanity of my Sister and Brother  
*Blas* in this Point.

We have carefully concealed our Origin,  
and, as we are sunk into the lowest Class of  
Men, have been content to be thought to  
have sprung from Parents, as mean as our  
Situation: and I should quit the World  
without divulging our Family, were I not  
in Point of Conscience, with Regard to my  
Nephew *Gil*, obliged to entrust the Secret  
to some discreet Person, and, as such, I  
have



‘ have chosen you preferably to all others of my Acquaintance.

‘ You will find authentic Proofs of our  
 ‘ Descent and Pretensions in that Box, which  
 ‘ I desire you will keep in your Custody, and  
 ‘ deliver to my Nephew ; when, by his  
 ‘ Character, you believe he has Strength of  
 ‘ Judgment equally to slight the Flattery or  
 ‘ Contempt of the World, and to esteem  
 ‘ Virtue the only Recommendation ; the sole  
 ‘ true Nobility. Till then, or till you hear  
 ‘ the Male-line of the Family of *Ximenes*  
 ‘ is likely to extinguish, I intreat you, nay,  
 ‘ I conjure you, by that Friendship which  
 ‘ has long subsisted between your Father,  
 ‘ yourself and me, that you will not acquaint  
 ‘ him with the Trust I now repose in you.’

My Father, at his Request took the Box home with him, having promised punctually to perform the Will of his dying Friend.

When my Father himself was summon’d to quit the World, he called and acquainted me with his Trust ; enjoining the same Secrecy, till one or other of the Conditions should disengage me.

The Count *Ximenes* is now the only Male of his Line, and you are, by Report, Master of the Prudence required to entitle you to the Knowledge of yourself.

As both Circumstances concur, one of which was sufficient, I am at Liberty to salute

lute you, Don *Gil Ximenes*, as next presumptive Heir to that Title. This, Sir, was the Reason, I said, had the King known you, he would not have made you a Gentleman by Patent, as it would have been needless. Had you known yourself, you would not have accepted the Creation; which, I hear, was so far from giving you Vanity, that you did not produce it, but upon account of your second Marriage.

The Box I mentioned I will immediately send for, and, with its Contents, deliver into your Hands.

I shall pass over the rest of the Conversation between *Muscada* and me. I kept him to Dinner, and having a handsome Apartment in the House, more than I made use of, with some difficulty I persuaded him to be my Guest during his Stay at *Madrid*.

In a Word, *Muscada* received the Box and Writings, put them into my Hands, and, induced by the same Motives as my *Uncle*, I have observed the same Secrecy; and should have done to the Day of my Death, if I had not, by *Sancho's* Affection for the young Countess, been constrained to disclose what you have seen and heard.

There is in the Box some large Parchments, which relate to the Estate, but the Contents I could not read, they being written in a Character peculiar to the Lawyers;  
for

for which reason, I prevailed on the Counsellors, who now peruse them, to take the Trouble of coming hither from *Valencia*, to decypher and give their Opinion of them.

The Gentlemen of the Law, who were Men of polite Literature and perfectly well bred, enlivened the Conversation at Meals while they staid, and, what I was surpriz'd at, complained of the Burthen our Law proved to the Poor, saying, It was much to be wished that the *King* and *Cortes*\*, would reform the Abuses in the inferior Courts, or rather suppress them entirely, as they deprived the Public of a Number of useful Subjects, filled the Streets with Thieves and Vagabonds, by filling the Jails for trifling Debts.

Till, said the other, the Vermin of the Law, your Petty-foggers, who live by the Folly and Ruin, of litigious Fools, are suppressed, the Law will always be a Grievance.

These Miscreants make it their Business to promote Suits, blasting the Character of Traders, representing them as on the Point of breaking, search out and instigate their Creditors to fall upon them, and undertake to secure their Debts, which they represent a little time will make desperate.

Thus

\* Parliament.

Thus they get a Number of Suits into their Hands, and, when they have fixed an unhappy Man in Jail, stripped his House, and sent his Wife and Children a begging, like the *Cartbagenians*, when they came to *Spain*, fall upon those to whom they pretended to bring Succour. They make long Bills for the respective Creditors, whom, if their Demands are disputed, they immediately sue; run them to treble the Expence, bring Executions into their Houses, and often send them to keep Company with their Debtors.

If only fair Practitioners, Men of Knowledge and Probity, were allowed, we should not have so many Complaints of the Law, or those who profess it lie under the Odium we now do.

Brother, replied the other, you have justly observed; but let us impartially own, these low Wretches are not the only Grievances. Our Class is greatly to blame; we study Logic more than Justice, which we labour to pervert by false Colours, and throwing a Gloss on Titles, we in our Conscience know defective: We labour to carry a Cause for our Client, though conscious his Claim is ill grounded: We not only are meer Sophists, and wrest the Laws to our Purpose, but use all the Art we are capable of, to stifle the *Right*, throw Dust in the Eyes of the Judges,

Judges, and obtain a Sentence in Favour of the Cause we plead.

How few among us consider the Justice of the Suit he takes upon him to defend? will our Knowledge of its Defects make us refuse a Brief with a Fee? No; to speak in general, the worst Causes, we like best to be concerned for, as they must be most laboured, consequently bring us larger Fees.

On the third Day of these Gentlemen examining the Writings, they gave my Father an Abstract, telling him he was undoubted Heir to the Estate, as well as Title of *Ximenes*. That Don *Henriquez*, born 1474, his great Grandfather, had three Sons, Don *Françisco*, Don *Lorenzo*, and Don *Garcias*; that the eldest had Issue Don *Henriquez*, whose Issue is not in the Genealogy; but the Knowledge they themselves had of that Family, having been concerned for it, supplied that Defect; and we should find in the Genealogy, the Countess *Ximenes* had in her Custody, and also in the Heralds Office, that his Son was Don *Pedro*, Grand-father of the late Count, who, dying without Issue, the Estate, as they would make appear, belonged to the collateral Branch, the Issue of Don *Lorenzo*; from whom Don *Blas*, as it authentically was proved, descended in a right line. That the Issue of Don *Garcias*, by Donia *Eleanora Jusilla*, was Don *Sancho*, who, by Donia *Maria*

*Maria Tordefillas* had Issue *Gil*, called *Perez*, and *Catalina*. Don *Juan*, called *Blas*, intermarried with the said *Catalina*, and had Issue *Gil*, in whom was united the Blood of the two collateral Branches.

That Don *Henriquez* the Ancestor, settled his Estates on Don *Tomaso de Velasco*, and Don *Gullermo de Fuenteseca*, to hold to them and their Heirs, in Trust for his eldest Son and his Heirs Male, and in Defaukt of such Issue, then in Trust to them to raise by Sale of Timber, or Mortgage, the Sum of two hundred Thousand Crowns for Daughters-Portions, if any, whether one or more; and on Failure of Male Issue in the Line of his said eldest Son, then the said Trustees, after the said Portion was raised for what Female Issue might be, are to hold the Estate in Trust on the same Conditions, and the same Provision for Daughters, for his second Son, and so to the third, on Determination of the Male Line of the second; and on Failure of Male Issue of the third Son, the Estate is charged with the Payment of two hundred Thousand Crowns, to be made to the Fathers of *The Holy Trinity*, to be employed by them in the Ransom of *Spanish* Christian Slaves, fallen into the Power of the *Mahometans*, and the Female Issue to enjoy it; if more than one, one Moiety to go with the Castle of *Ximenes* to the eldest, and the o-  
the

ther Moiety to be equally divided among the younger Daughters.

On this Deed is endorsed the following Words: ‘ *Memorandum*, I have, the Day and  
 ‘ Year within mentioned, signed six Deeds,  
 ‘ of the same Tenor of this, each Deed consisting of seven Skins of Parchment, each  
 ‘ Skin signed and sealed by me, and witnessed  
 ‘ by the Witnesses, who have subscribed their  
 ‘ Names hereunto; two of which Deeds I  
 ‘ have given into the respective Hands of  
 ‘ my good Friends, Don *Tomaso de Velasca*,  
 ‘ and Don *Gullkmo de Fuenteseca*; a third to  
 ‘ my Son Don *Francisco*, a fourth to my second Son Don *Lorenzo*, the fifth to Don  
 ‘ *Garcia*, my third Son, and the sixth to the  
 ‘ Fathers of *The Holy Trinity*,

*Signed,*

*Don HENRIQUEZ, Count XIMENES.*

This seems to be all written in the proper Hand-writing of Don *Henriquez*; ’tis witnessed by the same Witnesses, as subscribed the Deeds.

We have also examined the Genealogy of the *O’Neals*, of which Family was your Grandmother. This Genealogy goes as far back as the Time of *Moses*; and we find her descended

descended from a Number of Ancestors conspicuous for their Rank and Vertue, and allied to all the ancient Kings and Nobility of the Kingdom of *Ireland*.

This Genealogy, which is in *Latin*, is authentically proved, and signed, not only by the Heralds, but by twenty four Lords.

They afterwards gave a particular Detail of some other Deeds, with which I shall not trouble the Reader.

They put into my Father's Hands a Manuscript, written by his Uncle, *Gil Perez*; this, when my Father had looked into a little while, he said, he would read to us at Leisure.

It was next consulted how Don *Blas* ought to proceed, and the Counsellors gave their Opinion on that Head, which exactly agreed with that of the Counsellors in *Madrid*, which I shall have Occasion to mention in the Sequel:

With Regard to the Possession of the Estate, they advised his acquainting the Heirs of the first Trustees, on whom the Trust devolved, with his Pretensions, and that he should lose no Time; for that the *Trinitarians*, believing the Heirs Male extinct, had demanded the two hundred Thousand Pieces of Eight.

They farther added, that they were of Opinion the Countess, who was of the same  
M Blood,



Blood, would, instead of giving him unnecessary Trouble, rejoice to find the Male Line still subsisting; and that it would be for the Interest of the Family, for Don *Sancho* to marry the young Lady.

On this Proposition my Father acquainted them with my Brother's Passion; adding, it was the sole Motive of making his Right public, which he should not otherwise have examined into, as he had no Notion of any other, than to a naked Title.

The next Morning the two Advocates, thoroughly satisfied with their Reception and Fees, took Leave, and my Father, thinking it Time to return to *Lirias*, acquainted Don *Alphonso*, that in three Days he would go home, and prepare for his Journey to *Madrid*.

To this my Patron, after his usual polite Manner, objected, that it would be cruel to leave the Countess alone, as he intended to accompany him in his Journey to Court, in Case his Interest, or that of his Friend's might be wanted; and requested, that the Ladies, my Uncle, and Don *Scipio*, might remain at *Leyva*.

After some Compliments, this was concluded on, and my Brother was to go with them. I had never seen this Metropolis, and told my Patron, I would be glad to augment

ment the Number of the Company, which he readily granted.

The following Day Don *Alphonso* gave Orders for every Thing necessary to our Journey: In the interim, the Countess desired my Father to impart to the Company the Contents of the Manuscript, as he had promised; he accordingly fetched the little Book, and read as follows.

---

CHAP. XIV.

*The Life of Don Bernardo, &c.*

‘ **A**S ’tis possible, that the Knowledge of  
 ‘ his Family may one Day be of signal  
 ‘ Use to my Nephew, *Gil*, known by the  
 ‘ Name of *Blas*, and of which he has hither-  
 ‘ to been kept in Ignorance, I think it a  
 ‘ Piece of Justice that I am, in Conscience,  
 ‘ obliged to perform, to leave such Lights,  
 ‘ as may guide him or his Posterity to those  
 ‘ Rights, which by the Laws of Nature and  
 ‘ of our Country, he may possibly claim.

‘ As I do not design, that what I now write,  
 ‘ shall come into the Hands of any Person,  
 ‘ till I am morally assured my last Day is at  
 ‘ Hand; I hope I shall not be taxed with

• Vanity (as that is far from being the Motive) in the following Account of our Family.

(Here this Manuscript repeats, what the Counsellors had observed of our Genealogy, which I, for that Reason, omit; and proceed.)

• This Account is verified by the Genealogies in my Possession, which have been collated with the respective Offices of the Heralds, as far as the Birth of my Brother-in-law, my Sister *Catalina* and self, who were enregistred by the Care of our respective Parents. Our common Ancestor, Don *Henriquez*, distinguished himself at the Age of twenty five against the rebellious Moors, inhabiting the Mountains of *Alpujarras* in *Granada*. They had envelopped the Count *de Tendilla*, Governor of that Kingdom, whom they had either slain or taken Prisoner, though he made a gallant Resistance, and laid many dead at his Horse's Feet, had not Don *Henriquez*, seeing his Uncle (for the Count was his Mother's Brother) in that Extremity, seconded by a few Gentlemen, made his Way to, by trampling over, and hewing down all that withstood his Fury, and rescued him at a Time that he despaired of Safety, and thought only of selling his Life at the dearest Rate he could.

• After

‘ After this first Engagement, in which the  
‘ *Moors* were discomfited with a great Slaugh-  
‘ ter, *Muley Ben-Hamet-Ben-Abdallah*, a Man  
‘ of known Bravery, and prodigious Strength;  
‘ sent a Challenge to the bravest *Spaniard* un-  
‘ der the Command of Count *Tendilla*.

‘ Don *Henriquez* was present, when the  
‘ Messenger of the *Moorish* Chief delivered  
‘ the Challenge, directed as I have said.

‘ He begged Leave to answer it; and,  
‘ having obtained his Uncle’s Permission,  
‘ though with some Difficulty, he bid the  
‘ Messenger tell *Muley Ben-Hamet-Ben-Abdal-*  
‘ *lah*, ‘ That he was far from arrogating to  
‘ himself the Epithet of the bravest *Spaniard*,  
‘ but hoped that would be no Objection on  
‘ the *Moor*’s Side, to the meeting him at  
‘ the Time, and in the Manner and Place  
‘ he had himself designed: That he was sorry,  
‘ he was to meet him as an Enemy, whom,  
‘ for his Bravery, he had much rather em-  
‘ brace as a Friend: That, whatever was the  
‘ Event, he could not but gain Honour in  
‘ an Encounter with the gallant *Muley*.’

‘ The Day appointed, the two Champions  
‘ (the respective Armies being drawn up on  
‘ either Side) issued forth, and engaged with  
‘ equal Resolution, giving and receiving se-  
‘ veral Wounds; but, after an obstinate Com-  
‘ bat, the *Moor*, fainting with Loss of Blood,  
‘ fell senseless from his Horse.

‘ Don *Henriquez* immediately alighted, and, finding he was not dead, had him conveyed to his own Tent, where his Wounds were dressed.

‘ The *Moors*, seeing their Champion fall, ran to rescue his Body, and revenge themselves on Don *Henriquez*; the *Christians* were as alert to secure the one, and protect the other.

‘ The Fight was long and bloody, but the *Moors* towards Evening were entirely routed, and pursued with terrible Havock, till the Darkness of the Night put an End to the Slaughter.

‘ *Muley-Ben-Hamet*, who had received no mortal Wound, was, by the Care taken of him, entirely recovered in six Weeks Time.

‘ The Count *Tendilla* often visited him, and obtained, by his good Usage and Persuasions, a Promise that he would listen, without Prejudice, to the Christian Doctrine; the Count not doubting, but he would be convinced, when he heard the Prophecies of the *Messiah*, and found them exactly fulfilled in the Life of *Jesus*, the Son of the *Virgin Mary*.

‘ In a Word, *Muley* admitted the Visits of several pious Clergymen; heard them with Patience; argued with Calmness, and, at length, convinced of the Verity of the Christian

Christian Religion, received the holy Sacrament of Baptism. He then entered into a Treaty with Count *Tendilla*, by which such *Moors* as refused to abandon their Errors and embrace the Christian Faith were to have free Liberty to depart for *Africa* with their personal Effects; and such as conformed, to be treated as good Subjects by the King.

In Consequence of which many left the Kingdom, and a Number professed themselves Christians, though they proved to be no less *Mahometans* in their Hearts.

*Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, then King and Queen of *Castile* and *Aragon*, in Reward of Don *Henriquez's* Bravery, sent him the Order of *Alcantara*. \*

M 4

I

\* This Order of Knighthood was instituted by King *Alphonso*, in the eleventh Century, occasioned by his taking of the City of that Name, in the Principality of *Estramadura*. This Prince is reckoned the tenth King of *Leon*, of that Name, by such as confound the Kings of *Castile* and *Leon*.

This Order resembles that of *Calatrava*, and was under its Jurisdiction; but in the Year one Thousand two hundred and nineteen, it was separated, and had its distinct Masters.

They at first wore a Hood; they are distinguished by a green Cross. The Order hath thirty-eight Commanderies, worth two hundred forty-eight Thousand one hundred fourteen Ducats yearly Revenue.

‘ I could not pass this remarkable Incident in the Life of my Ancestor, as either Envy or Ignorance had omitted it in our Histories, though it is recorded in the Patent. The Original is in the Archives of the Order of *Alcantara*, which I have seen and read ; it bears Date *Anno*, 1499.

‘ I write this for the Benefit and Instruction of my Nephew, in whom the two younger Branches of the Descent from this Don *Henriquez* unite, I shall pass over in Silence the Line of Don *Francisco*, eldest Son of the said *Henriquez*.

(Here the Manuscript gives the same Account of our Genealogy, as has been already mentioned, and proceeds)

‘ Don *Bernardo*, my Uncle, at the Age of nineteen, served a Volunteer under the Duke *Medina-Celi*, Vice-Roy of *Sicily*, and was at the taking the Island of *Gelves* with that Nobleman ; but the *Turkish* Fleet coming upon them, when little expected, great Part of that of the Vice-Roy’s was taken or destroyed, and he himself narrowly escaped. One of his Sons, who was on board the same Ship with *Bernardo*, was with him taken, the Ship being boarded, and carried to *Tripoli*.

‘ This was in the Year one Thousand five hundred fifty nine. His Ransom was held at so high a Rate, that he was obliged to  
‘ sell

‘ fell the better Part of his Fortune, to put  
 ‘ an End to a Slavery, which he endured  
 ‘ three Years, and which his Master, who  
 ‘ knew he was descended from a noble Fa-  
 ‘ mily related to the Vice-Roy, rendered,  
 ‘ every Day more intolerable to force him  
 ‘ to his Price.

‘ On his Return to *Spain*, he went to  
 ‘ Court, and had the Honour to be presented  
 ‘ to his Majesty, *Philip the second*, who pro-  
 ‘ mised to make him amends for his Suf-  
 ‘ ferings and Loss, and immediately gave  
 ‘ him a Company.

‘ There was at the same Time in *Madrid*  
 ‘ the great *O’Neal of Ireland*, but incognito.  
 ‘ He had brought his Daughter with him to  
 ‘ *Spain*, designing her for a religious Life.

‘ This young Lady was then with the  
 ‘ Countess of *Alcaudet*, whose Husband, the  
 ‘ Count, at that Time was Governor of *Oran*,  
 ‘ and commanded the Regiment in which  
 ‘ Don *Bernardo* had his Company. This, as  
 ‘ he was soon to go to his Command, occa-  
 ‘ sioned his often waiting on the Countess, and  
 ‘ gave him Opportunities of conversing with  
 ‘ the young *Hibernian* Lady, with whom he  
 ‘ became deeply enamoured, and who had no  
 ‘ less tender Sentiments for *Bernardo*.

‘ He made the Countess the Confidant of  
 ‘ his Passion; at his Request she spoke to  
 ‘ *O’Neal*, whom she acquainted with *Ber-*



‘ *nardo's* Family, Character, Fortune and  
 ‘ Misfortune.

‘ *O'Neal* saw, was pleased with the young  
 ‘ Gentleman; and, in short, the amorous  
 ‘ Couple were married on the first of *Ya-*  
 ‘ *nuary*, one Thousand five hundred sixty  
 ‘ two, and the following Month *Don Ber-*  
 ‘ *nardo* went to his Command, leaving his  
 ‘ Bride with the Countess.

‘ In the Year one Thousand five hundred  
 ‘ sixty three, *Salarracz*, King of *Algiers*, laid  
 ‘ Siege to the Cities *Oran* and *Mezalquivir*.

‘ Against *Oran* the *Turks* brought an Ar-  
 ‘ my of ten Thousand Men, a Number of  
 ‘ large Ships and Gallies, to prevent Suc-  
 ‘ cours arriving from *Spain* or *Italy*, and  
 ‘ battered the Town with twenty Pieces of  
 ‘ large Cannon.

‘ The Beseiged made a glorious Defence,  
 ‘ and, when the Breach was sufficient for an  
 ‘ Assault, resolved to die rather than capitulate.

‘ Happily for them, the very Day the  
 ‘ *Turks* prepared to make a general Assault,  
 ‘ *Don Juan de Cordova*, General of the *Spa-*  
 ‘ *nish* Gallies, with Succours from *Carthage*,  
 ‘ appeared in the *Offing*, at the Sight of whose  
 ‘ Fleet the *Turks* dislodged in the greatest  
 ‘ Hurry and Confusion, leaving their Can-  
 ‘ non behind them, (which the Garrison drew  
 ‘ into the Town;) and, getting on board their  
 ‘ Ships, endeavoured to make off to *Algiers*.

‘ *Don*

‘ Don *Juan* gave them Chace, took five  
‘ and twenty Galliot, and three large *Morisco*  
‘ Ships.

‘ The *Moors* threatned to renew the Siege  
‘ the ensuing Year; but the King setting to  
‘ Sea a powerful Fleet, under the Command  
‘ of Don *Garcia* of *Toledo*, the Infidels  
‘ thought better, than to put their Menaces  
‘ in Execution.

‘ Don *Bernardo*, being severely wounded  
‘ in this Siege, Count *Alcaudet* sent him to *Madríd*,  
‘ where, by the Skill of abler Surgeons  
‘ than were at *Oran*, he was perfectly cured.

‘ In one Thousand five hundred sixty four,  
‘ his Son *Juan* was born in his House at *Estella*,  
‘ where he left his Lady, and going  
‘ on board the Fleet, as he was commanded,  
‘ he assisted at the Reducing the Castle of *El-Penon*.  
‘ It was heretofore built by Count  
‘ *Peter Navarro*, near the City *Velez*, on the  
‘ Coast of *Africa*, and then in the Possession  
‘ of the *Moors*.

‘ Two Years after this, the *Moriscoes* of the  
‘ Kingdom of *Granada* broke out into open  
‘ Rebellion: Don *Bernardo*, whom at this  
‘ Time the King honoured with the Com-  
‘ mand of a Regiment, was sent with other  
‘ Troops under the Command of the Mar-  
‘ quis de *Mandegar*, to chastise them; and he  
‘ defeated the Infidels in seven different En-  
‘ gagements.

‘ This Year was remarkable for the Death  
 ‘ of Prince *Charles*, who, by the King his  
 ‘ Father’s Command, had his Veins opened  
 ‘ in a warm Bath, and expired, *Anno 1566*.

‘ The Dutcheſs of *Parma*, the King’s na-  
 ‘ tural Siſter, was at that Time Regent of  
 ‘ the *Netherlands* for his Maſteſty.

‘ She was Daughter of the Emperor *Charles*  
 ‘ the fifth, who wore the Imperial Crown,  
 ‘ but the firſt King of *Spain* of that Name.

‘ The People, diſdaining to be governed  
 ‘ by a Woman, began to ſhew their Diſcon-  
 ‘ tents by Murmurs, which encreaſed, and  
 ‘ roſe to a Rebellion; the Populace, joining  
 ‘ with thoſe of the reformed Religion, com-  
 ‘ mitted great Violences.

‘ This occaſioned his Maſteſty’s ſending  
 ‘ thither the Duke *D’Alva*, to endeavour  
 ‘ the Exinction of thoſe Flames, to which,  
 ‘ however, he rather added Fury, by ſeizing  
 ‘ on the Counts *Egmont* and *Horn*; but the  
 ‘ provident Prince of *Orange* eſcaped him,  
 ‘ or he had doubtleſs ſhared the Fate of thoſe  
 ‘ Noblemen, whom this new Governor cauſed  
 ‘ to be executed in *June*.

‘ In one Thouſand five hundred ſixty-ſeven,  
 ‘ *Shan O’Neal*, Father-in-law to Don *Ber-*  
 ‘ *nardo*, raiſed ſome Commotions in the North  
 ‘ of *Ireland*, in hopes to ſhake off the *Eng-*  
 ‘ *liſh* Yoke; to reſtore the Kingdom to its  
 ‘ ancient Liberty, the Nobility to their  
 ‘ Rights

‘ Rights, and to re-establish the *Roman* Catholic Religion, which *Elizabeth*, Queen of *England*, had at Heart to abolish.

‘ He was traitèrously murdered by his own People : This News so affected *Don Bernardo*’s Lady, then with Child, that she aborted and died.

‘ *Don Bernardo* was greatly afflicted at the Loss of so good a Wife, and the Misfortune of his Father-in-law’s Death, who had great Credit at the Court of *Spain*, by which he had procured his Son-in-law the Regiment he commanded ; and, as he privately drew great Sums of Money from the King, to facilitate the abovementioned Designs, he supplied *Don Bernardo* with sufficient to live up to his Rank, without demanding the Arrears due to him from the Crown, for either his Service or the Cloathing his Regiment, which he had given the Crown Credit for, from the Time he was appointed to command it.

‘ The Duke *D’Alva*’s Severity in the *Netherlands*, was throwing Oil on the Fire ; the more cruelly he behaved, the more refractory were the *Flemmings*, which obliged his Majesty to send thither, gradually, the choicest of his Troops, to compel them to their Duty.

‘ *Don Bernardo*’s Regiment being one of those appointed for this Service, he went to *Madrid*

‘ *Madrid*, to solicit Payment of his Arrears,  
 ‘ the Money he had advanced for the Cloath-  
 ‘ ings, and a Sum to new-cloath his Regi-  
 ‘ ment.

‘ Meeting with nothing but Complaisance,  
 ‘ fair Words and Delays from the Ministers,  
 ‘ he, who was of a proud Spirit, took up  
 ‘ Money on his Estate; again cloathed the  
 ‘ Corps he commanded; marched them to  
 ‘ *Cales*; saw them embarked on board the  
 ‘ Transports, and, hiring a nimble Vessel for  
 ‘ himself and Equipage, leaving the Care of  
 ‘ his Regiment to his Lieutenant Colonel, set  
 ‘ Sail for *Flanders* some Days before the rest  
 ‘ of the Fleet.

‘ Having got into the main Ocean, his  
 ‘ Ship was overtaken by a Storm, which was  
 ‘ so violent, that the Master was obliged to  
 ‘ cut away all the Masts to save their Lives.

‘ They were tossed five and twenty Days  
 ‘ by this Tempest, and at last driven and  
 ‘ wrecked on the Coast of *Plymouth* in *Eng-  
 ‘ land*.

‘ The Lives of the Crew and Passengers  
 ‘ were saved, but all their Effects lost.

‘ Don *Bernardo* in this Distress addressed  
 ‘ himself to his Excellency Don *Gerardo de  
 ‘ Spesio*, the *Spanish* Ambassador at the Court  
 ‘ of Queen *Elizabeth*, who ordered him a  
 ‘ Sum of Money to cloath and bear his  
 ‘ Charges to *London*, whither he advised his  
 ‘ coming

‘ coming, as it might be for the King their Master’s Service.

‘ At this Time, towards the Close of the Year one Thousand five hundred sixty-eight, there was no good Understanding between the Court of *Spain*, and that of *England*, on Account of some Monies belonging to the Merchants of *Genoa*, which they had lent the King, and was going to the Duke of *Alva* for the Cloathing and Paying of the Garrisons in the *Netherlands*.

‘ The Ships, which had this Money on board, being chased by some *French* Cruisers, took Shelter in the *English* Harbours, *Plymouth*, *Falmouth* and *Southampton*.

‘ The Queen having certain Intelligence, that this Money was to be employed against the Rebels in *Flanders*, whom she underhand had, from the first, supported; and to a Number of whom she had allowed Settlements in her Dominions, in which they had taken Refuge: The Queen, I say, on this Intelligence, laid Hands on the Money, and gave Security for it to the *Genoese* Merchants.

‘ On this, and the Queen’s Refusal to part with the Money, the Duke of *Alva* seized on the Effects of the *English* Merchants in the *Netherlands*, and she made Reprisals on those of the *Flemings* in *England*, much more considerable.

‘ In

‘ In the Beginning of *January*, one Thou-  
 ‘ sand five hundred sixty-nine, the Queen  
 ‘ justified her Proceedings, by the Duke of  
 ‘ *Alva*’s having first seized the Effects of her  
 ‘ Subjects, and cast the Blame of all upon  
 ‘ the *Spanish* Ambassador, Don *Gerardo*. He  
 ‘ answered this, and hinted, That it was not  
 ‘ published by the Queen, but by the Ene-  
 ‘ mies of *Spain*; justified himself, taxed the  
 ‘ Queen as the Author of the Dissention,  
 ‘ and treated her with such Asperity, that  
 ‘ she put him under an Arrest for two Days,  
 ‘ and made her Complaints to the King of  
 ‘ *Spain*.

‘ Don *Bernardo* arrived in *London* few Days  
 ‘ after this Affront done to the *Spanish* Mini-  
 ‘ ster, who resented it as the greatest Insult  
 ‘ on the King his Master; and dispatched a  
 ‘ Courier to *Madrid* with loud Complaints.

‘ In *Spain* the King, on the Detention of  
 ‘ the above Money in *England*, seized on all  
 ‘ the *English* Effects, and endeavoured to ex-  
 ‘ cite a Rebellion in *England* and *Ireland*.

‘ The *English*, though no War was pro-  
 ‘ claimed, made daily Reprisals on the *Spa-  
 ‘ nish* Ships, and did such considerable Da-  
 ‘ mage to the Subjects of *Spain*, that the  
 ‘ Queen, fearing the Consequences would be  
 ‘ a War in form between the Crowns, thought  
 ‘ fit to put an End to their Piracies.

‘ Don

‘ Don *Bernardo* sent to *Spain* to his Ste-  
ward a Power to to raise more Money upon  
his Estate, to be remitted him to *Flanders*;  
and taking, on Letters of Exchange what  
was necessary to furnish him a new Equi-  
page from an *English Merchant* recom-  
mended to him by the Ambassador, he  
proposed to set out to join his Regiment,  
which had a more successful Voyage.

‘ He acquainted Don *Gerardo*, that he in-  
tended in few Days to take his Leave of  
his Excellency; to which the Ambassador  
answered, that he must detain him for his  
Majesty’s Service some little Time, but ad-  
vised him to send away his Servants and  
Baggage; to take a private Lodging; ap-  
pear as little as possible, and to come no  
more near his House: that he would see  
him frequently.

‘ That his Visits would necessarily put him  
to some Expence; and, as it was for the  
King’s Service, it was not just, it should be  
out of his Pocket: at the same Time he put a  
Purse of five hundred Pieces of *English Gold*  
into his Hand, telling him, That the sooner  
he got a Lodging, and acquainted him  
with the Place, the better it would be. He  
farther advised him to conceal his Stay  
from the Family, which he would have  
suppose him gone.

‘ On



‘ On these Instructions Don *Bernardo* sent  
 ‘ away his Baggage and Servants by a Ship  
 ‘ in the River *Thames*, telling them he would  
 ‘ go to *Dover*, and thence cross; but ordered  
 ‘ them to go forward to *Brussels*, without  
 ‘ waiting his Arrival, and there hire a House  
 ‘ for him.

‘ These being shipped off, and *Bernardo*  
 ‘ having taken a handsome Lodging, with  
 ‘ which he acquainted Don *Gerardo*, he pub-  
 ‘ lickly took his Leave of him, and, in the  
 ‘ Opinion of the Ambassador’s Family, set  
 ‘ out as he had reported he designed.

‘ He had not been four Hours at his  
 ‘ Lodgings, where he passed for a *Genoese*  
 ‘ Merchant, under the Name of *Bracardo*,  
 ‘ when a Servant in Livery enquired for,  
 ‘ gave him Letter from the Ambassador, and  
 ‘ in which he told him, That, as he could  
 ‘ not but want a Servant, he had sent him  
 ‘ an *Italian*, who spoke the *English* like a  
 ‘ Native, and in whom he put entire Confi-  
 ‘ dence, his Excellency having had good Ex-  
 ‘ perience of his Fidelity; desired he might  
 ‘ go between them, but that he would never  
 ‘ send him in the Day-time.

‘ He farther added, he should that Night  
 ‘ sup with him, with some Friends, desiring  
 ‘ he would by that Servant, whom he was  
 ‘ to look upon his, order a handsome Enter-  
 ‘ tainment.

‘ About

‘ About six that Evening he was surprized  
‘ with a Visit from the Marquis *Vitelli*, who  
‘ brought with him a Porter carrying a small  
‘ Port-manteau Trunk on his Shoulder.

‘ The Marquis opening it, told him there  
‘ were six Thousand Pieces of Gold of *Eng-*  
‘ *lish* Coin; that he was to pay that, and  
‘ such other Money, as would be put into his  
‘ Hands, to the Persons who should with  
‘ the Sum they demanded, give him a par-  
‘ ticular Token, which he acquainted him  
‘ with.

‘ He then let him know that he was  
‘ come over under Pretence of composing  
‘ the Differences subsisting between the two  
‘ Crowns; but his Business was to command  
‘ the Troops the Duke of *Alva* was to send  
‘ to the Assistance of the Earls of *Northum-*  
‘ *berland* and *Westmoreland*, two Lords of  
‘ great Power in the North of *England*, who  
‘ meditated an Insurrection: to this End his  
‘ Instructions and Powers were purposely de-  
‘ fective, that he might be obliged to send  
‘ for such as were more ample, and prolong  
‘ Time, to observe what Progress was made.

‘ That indeed the Duke *D’Alva* had pro-  
‘ mised to support those Lords with Troops  
‘ from *Flanders*; and had sent the Gover-  
‘ nor of *Dunkirk*, disguised in a Sailor’s Ha-  
‘ bit, with able Pilots, to examine and sound  
‘ the *English* Ports, which were most proper  
‘ for

' for their landing; but that he would not  
 ' hazard the King's Troops, till he saw what  
 ' Forces those Lords could set on Foot;  
 ' what Influence the Cause, they should pub-  
 ' lish for their taking up Arms, had on the  
 ' Minds of the People; how the *English Ro-*  
 ' *man* Catholics, whom, the Marquis said, he  
 ' found intimidated by the Imprisonment of  
 ' the Duke of *Norfolk*, stood affected; how  
 ' the *English* Nobility in general would be-  
 ' have, and what Forces *Elizabeth* could, on  
 ' a sudden, muster.

' The Duke from me expects, continued  
 ' the Marquis, a faithful Account of these  
 ' Particulars.

' The two Earls abovementioned sup with  
 ' you To-night, and you have been kept  
 ' in *England* to discipline the Peasants whom  
 ' the Lords shall arm; to which End' you  
 ' will be obliged soon to go into the *North*,  
 ' where you will find some of your Acquain-  
 ' tance, experienced Officers with whom you  
 ' have served, and who have been dispersed,  
 ' and kept close for some Time, in the Houses  
 ' of the mal-content Gentry.

' About two Hours after the Marquis *Vi-*  
 ' *telli* had been with *Bernardo*, the Earl of  
 ' *Northumberland* enquired for, and was shewn  
 ' up to Signor *Brocardo*.

' *Vitelli* told him the Quality of his Visi-  
 ' tor, who, muffled up in a Cloak, had  
 ' walked

‘ walked thither on Foot, and without Attendance.

‘ They had hardly complimented each other, before the Earl of *Westmoreland* came in, whom the other *English* Nobleman saluted by his Title.

‘ Signor *Brocardo* desired they would be more upon their Guard; for, if possibly any of the Family should over-hear their Quality, the Surprize of a Merchant being honoured with such Visitors, might awaken their Curiosity and Suspensions; and cause such Enquiry and Observation, as might prove of dangerous, if not fatal Consequence.

‘ They greatly applauded *Brocardo*’s Precaution; and *Westmoreland*, clapping him on the Shoulder, said—I hope, Merchant, we shall have a good Correspondent of you; I have two Thousand Pieces of course *Vayettas* ready to consign you, which, I don’t question, you will give a good Account of, as, I hope, they will come in Season for a Market.

‘ I have three Thousand of the same, added *Northumberland*, meaning Men by the Term *Vayettas*.

‘ *Brocardo*, who understood them, answered, That if they had ten Thousand each, they would not overstock the Market, as that Commodity was greatly in Demand.

‘ Don

‘ Don *Gerardo*, who had given these Noble-  
‘ men a Character of Don *Bernardo*, came  
‘ in disguised and wrapped up in a Cloak.

‘ As soon as he had saluted the Company,  
‘ Signor *Brocardo*, said he, I have brought  
‘ you as much of the Money for your Bill of  
‘ Exchange drawn upon m, as I could con-  
‘ veniently bring though it is all in Gold,  
‘ on Account of its Weight; of which I de-  
‘ sire you will ease me, giving him a Bag:  
‘ you need not take the Trouble to count it;  
‘ depend on my Word, you will find just  
‘ fifteen hundred Pieces: To-morrow you  
‘ will receive a farther Sum.

‘ The Company then entered upon the  
‘ Business which occasioned the Meeting.

‘ The two *English* Noblemen were of O-  
‘ pinion, that the landing a Body of regular  
‘ Troops, at the same Time they published  
‘ their Manifesto, would greatly encourage  
‘ the better Sort to declare for, and join them;  
‘ but the *Spaniards* alleged that such a Pro-  
‘ cedure would rather hurt them; that the  
‘ *English*, at least the common People, had  
‘ a natural Antipathy to all Strangers, which,  
‘ with a Jealousy for their Liberty, and the  
‘ Notion they might entertain of a designed  
‘ Conquest of their Country, would make  
‘ even those who were inclined to follow  
‘ their Fortunes, desert them and unite a-  
‘ gainst

‘ gainst such auxiliary *Spanish* Troops, as a-  
‘ gainst the common Enemy.

‘ There were, beside other cogent Reasons  
‘ to be objected, What Place on the Coast  
‘ had they to land in, or retreat to? that it  
‘ was absolutely necessary to secure some  
‘ strong Port, even for their own Safety, in  
‘ Case the Success of their Enterprize was  
‘ not equal to the Justice of the Cause they  
‘ espoused, which was that of a Sovereign  
‘ Queen, nay, their Sovereign treacherously  
‘ and cruelly detained in Prison by the U-  
‘ surper of her just Rights; for no Casuist  
‘ could allow *Elizabeth’s* Title to come in  
‘ Competition with that of *Mary*.

‘ By Birth she could have no Claim, being  
‘ illegitimate; and by the Will of *Henry* she  
‘ had as little Right, since he could not dis-  
‘ pose of the Crown to the Prejudice of the  
‘ right Heir, who was *Mary* Queen of *Scots*.

‘ But, not to digress from the subject Matter,  
‘ were the Proposal of the two Lords to be  
‘ made to the King of *Spain*, it might make  
‘ his Majesty doubt their having the Influence  
‘ and Interest, they had been represented to  
‘ have, and *Elizabeth* having the Number  
‘ of intestine Enemies reported.

‘ That any Number of Troops could not  
‘ be drawn together, even upon the King’s  
‘ own Coasts, without alarming the *English*  
‘ Court, much less embarked for *England*;  
‘ and

' and the Precautions, the Queen would na-  
 ' turally take to withstand a Descent, would  
 ' infallibly defeat their Design, frustrate all  
 ' Hopes of the imprisoed Queen, probably  
 ' cause a Declaration of War against *Spain*,  
 ' and give the *Flemish* Rebels a powerful Pro-  
 ' tector in *Elizabeth*; whereas, if they found  
 ' themselves strong enough, only to make  
 ' Head against her Forces, to draw the  
 ' Queen of *Scots* out of her Confinement,  
 ' and have the additional Strength of her  
 ' Name with them, the King their Master  
 ' would be under no Obligation longer to  
 ' keep any Measures with *Elizabeth*, but  
 ' would send them what Troops they them-  
 ' selves should deem necessary, though, on  
 ' Account of the *English* Jealousy, that Num-  
 ' ber ought not to exceed one third or one  
 ' fourth of the Army of Natives, which they  
 ' may then have drawn together.

' That as to Money, his *Catholic* Maje-  
 ' sty was willing to disburse what should be  
 ' wanting to enter upon the Undertaking;  
 ' and had already remitted five hundred  
 ' Thousand Pieces of Eight, with Orders to  
 ' pay that Sum to the two Earls present at  
 ' this Conference.

' That the Money should, by Degrees,  
 ' be conveyd to the Lodgings of Signor *Bro-  
 ' cardo*, and they might from him receive it  
 ' by

‘ by such Hands as they could intrust, and  
‘ in such Parcels.

‘ The *English* Noblemen were not thorough-  
‘ ly satisfied with these Reasons, and insisted  
‘ on the Rawness of new-raised Men, as ne-  
‘ cessary to be remedied by the mixing some  
‘ Veterans among them.

‘ To this they were answered, That they  
‘ had several experienced Officers already in  
‘ the North, to which Number was added  
‘ Don *Bernardo* then present; and that the  
‘ Marquis *Vitelli*’s Knowledge in Military  
‘ Affairs could not be called in Question.

‘ That the King had sent him to com-  
‘ mand in Chief the Troops, which he de-  
‘ signed for their Support, when once the *Eng-  
‘ lish* were in Motion.

‘ These *English* Noblemen had several  
‘ Conferences at Signor *Brocardo*’s Lodgings,  
‘ but they could not induce the *Spaniards* to  
‘ hazard the landing any Troops.

‘ At length the Earl of *Westmoreland*’s Re-  
‘ sentment to *Elizabeth*, who had wrong-  
‘ fully granted from him a rich Copper-Mine  
‘ found in his Estate, got the better of his  
‘ Precaution, and he influenced *Northumber-  
‘ land*.

‘ They went into the North, taking Don  
‘ *Bernardo* with them, whither the Money  
‘ they received from *Spain* was remitted, and  
‘ broke out into open Rebellion sooner, than  
N they



‘ they intended; and, indeed, before they  
‘ had taken the necessary measures; but they  
‘ were under a Necessity of either entirely a-  
‘ bandoning their Design, or of declaring  
‘ themselves as they did: for *Elizabeth*, who  
‘ had gained Intelligence of the meditated  
‘ Revolt, sent for them to Court, and, on  
‘ their evasive Excuses, repeated her Com-  
‘ mands in Terms which gave them plainly  
‘ to understand, she was no Stranger to what  
‘ was in Agitation.

‘ The Letters and Notes, belonging to  
‘ Don *Bernardo*, which came to my Hands,  
‘ and from which I have extracted the great-  
‘ est Part of what relates to his Life, con-  
‘ tain a particular Account of the Progress of  
‘ this Rebellion, so fatal to the two before-  
‘ mentioned Chiefs; which, as it is foreign  
‘ to my Design, I pass over, and shall only  
‘ say, that *Elizabeth* removed her Rival *Ma-  
ry*, to a fortified Town, which the Rebels  
‘ were not in a Condition to besiege: That  
‘ their Forces, not exceeding four Thousand  
‘ Foot and six hundred Horse, and the  
‘ Queen’s Troops amounting to twenty Thou-  
‘ sand and upwards, they durst not face them,  
‘ but retired northward, in Hopes to encrease  
‘ their Numbers; but in this being disap-  
‘ pointed, and on the contrary many daily  
‘ deserting them, they dispersed: every Man  
‘ providing for his own Safety.

‘ The

‘ The Earl of *Northumberland* and Don  
 ‘ *Bernardo* fled to *Scotland*; the Earl of *West-*  
 ‘ *morland* got into the *Netberlands*, where the  
 ‘ King allowed him a small Pension for his  
 ‘ Support.

‘ Don *Bernardo*, finding at his Arrival in  
 ‘ the City of *Edinburgh*, a *Scot*, Ship bound  
 ‘ for *Cadix*, took his Passage for that Island,  
 ‘ and would have persuaded *Northumberland*  
 ‘ to have kept him Company; but he, buoy-  
 ‘ ed up with vain Hopes of still succeeding,  
 ‘ as a Gentleman, named *Dacres*, who after-  
 ‘ wards appeared in Arms, flattered him in  
 ‘ his Letters, *Bernardo* took his Leave of  
 ‘ him, and, arriving happily at *Cadix*, made  
 ‘ the best of his Way to Court, where he  
 ‘ gave the King a particular Detail of all  
 ‘ Transactions.

‘ The King seemed to be little moved, as  
 ‘ indeed he was a Prince of great Constancy,  
 ‘ and only said, when he had with great Pa-  
 ‘ tience, and not the least Sign of Emotion,  
 ‘ heard the whole—I had no great Hopes of  
 ‘ this Enterprize, when I heard the Duke of  
 ‘ *Norfolk* was imprisoned.

‘ *Bernardo*, you may be of more Service  
 ‘ to me by staying at Court, than by going  
 ‘ to *Flanders*. I have raised you to the Rank  
 ‘ of Major General.

‘ He returned his Majesty Thanks, and  
 ‘ asked if his Majesty’s Affairs would permit  
 ‘ him to go to his own House for a Month.

‘ The King bid him not exceed that Space.

‘ Having this Permission, he went to *Estella*, where arriving, as my Father fell  
 ‘ under Misfortunes, he took me and my  
 ‘ Sister to his House, and left us under the  
 ‘ Care of an old Gentlewoman, who had  
 ‘ his own Son under her Tuition.

## C H A P. XV.

### *A Continuation of the foregoing.*

‘ **O**N *Bernardo*’s Return to Court, the  
 ‘ King told him, he must accompany  
 ‘ Don *Juan de Mendoza* to *Ireland*; that he  
 ‘ should have his Instructions in ten Days.

‘ Having received them, Don *Juan* and  
 ‘ he set Sail from *Cadix* in a light Frigate,  
 ‘ and, without Accident, landed in *Ireland*,  
 ‘ after a short and pleasant Voyage.

‘ Don *Bernardo*’s Pretence, for visiting this  
 ‘ Kingdom was to be acquainted with the  
 ‘ Family of his deceased Lady, and to lay  
 ‘ Claim for her Son to a Succession.

‘ Don

‘ Don *Juan* pretended his Friendship for  
 ‘ *Bernardo*, and his Curiosity to see that King-  
 ‘ dom, whose ancient Inhabitants are said to  
 ‘ be descended from the *Spaniards*, were the  
 ‘ only Motives of his accompanying him.

‘ Their Business was to discover the true  
 ‘ Scituation of that Kingdom; the Frame of  
 ‘ Mind among the old *Irish* Nobility; what  
 ‘ Number of Forces the *Roman* Catholics  
 ‘ could actually bring together; what Sea-  
 ‘ ports could be secured, and to land pri-  
 ‘ vately (to be dispersed among the Clans of  
 ‘ old *Irish*) a Number of Arms, and a Quantity  
 ‘ of Amunition, with which their Frigate  
 ‘ was laden.

‘ The King, from the Obstinacy of the  
 ‘ *Flemings*, on whom the Duke of *Alva*’s  
 ‘ Severity had an Effect different from what  
 ‘ was expected, judged that they were under-  
 ‘ hand animated by *Elizabeth* of *England*;  
 ‘ and was therefore resolved to be in a Rea-  
 ‘ diness, in case she should espouse the Cause  
 ‘ of his Rebel-Subjects, to cut her out Work  
 ‘ enough at Home.

‘ Don *Bernardo* and Don *Juan* were great-  
 ‘ ly carested, especially the former by his  
 ‘ Wife’s Relations in particular.

‘ Having disposed of their Lading to the  
 ‘ Chiefs of the Clans, and having staid till  
 ‘ *January*, one Thousand five hundred seventy,  
 ‘ chusing to return in Winter, for Fear of

‘ meeting the Count *de la Marc*’s Squadron,  
‘ who, with four and twenty Ships of War,  
‘ had done considerable Damage to the *Spanish*  
‘ Subjects, They embarked, returned  
‘ in Safety to *Cales*, and, posting to Court,  
‘ gave the King a satisfactory Account of  
‘ their Negotiations.

‘ His Majesty told *Bernardo*, that he did  
‘ not forget, and would reward his Services;  
‘ that he might repose himself at Home  
‘ some Months, after the Fatigues he had  
‘ gone through.

‘ This Year was famous for the League  
‘ between his Holiness, his Majesty and the  
‘ States of *Venice*, against the *Turks*, who  
‘ had taken the Island of *Cyprus* from the  
‘ *Venetians*; and for the signal Victory op-  
‘ posite to the Gulf of *Lepanto*, obtained by  
‘ the Christians, under the Command of  
‘ Don *John* of *Austria*, natural Brother to the  
‘ King.

‘ Don *Bernardo* had scarce been a Month  
‘ at his own House, when he was sent for  
‘ back to Court, at the Request of that  
‘ Prince, who did him the Honour to distin-  
‘ guish him.

‘ He accordingly set out in *April*, and on  
‘ his Arrival, was raised to the Rank of  
‘ Lieutenant General, with a Present from  
‘ the King of two Thousand Pistoles, to pre-  
‘ pare his Equipage, and a Promise of his  
Arrears,

‘ Arrears and Cloathings being paid him on  
‘ his Return from the designed Expedition.

‘ Every Thing being ready, the Christian  
‘ Fleet rendezvoused in the Fare of *Messina*,  
‘ whence it set Sail the tenth of *September* to-  
‘ wards the *Turkish* Fleet.

‘ I shall omit the Account Don *Bernardo*  
‘ has left in his Papers of this Battle, and  
‘ only take Notice of what relates to him in  
‘ particular.

‘ The Forlorn-hope of the Christians, con-  
‘ sisting of six large Galleasses, carrying sixty  
‘ Guns and four hundred Men each, were  
‘ under the Command of Don *Bernardo* and  
‘ two Major-Generals. The Wind, of which  
‘ the *Turks* had the Advantage, falling calm,  
‘ he caused some Gallies to take these Ships  
‘ in Tow, and, advancing towards, so great-  
‘ ly annoyed the Enemy, that he opened  
‘ the Way to the Victory which followed,  
‘ and received, after the Battle, the General’s  
‘ Thanks for the signal Service he had per-  
‘ formed; beside which Honour, Don *Juan*  
‘ of *Austria*, who was a magnanimous Prince,  
‘ did him a signal one in the Account sent  
‘ his Majesty of the Particulars of this glo-  
‘ rious Victory, by which the *Turks* lost two  
‘ hundred Gallies, either sunk or taken, thir-  
‘ ty Thousand Men slain, five Thousand  
‘ taken Prisoners, and, besides, twenty Thou-  
‘ sand Christian Slaves recovered their Liber-

ty. The Battle was fought on the second  
of *October*.

Don *Bernardo* was wounded in so desperate a Manner in his Belly by a Splinter, that his Recovery was despaired of.

Don *John*, whose Esteem was greatly increased by his gallant Behaviour, visited, and sent his own Surgeons to take Care of him; it was, however, six Weeks before he was out of Danger, and nine Months before he could appear abroad.

When he went to Court, the King received him very graciously, and let him know, that Don *John* had done him Justice.

Don *Bernardo* solicited the Payment of the Money he had advanced for cloathing his Regiment, and that due for his Arrears of Pay; and, in his Memorial, represented, that he had been obliged to mortgage his Estate to give the King Credit, that the Service might not be neglected.

This Zeal was greatly applauded; and he was promised, that his Accounts should be passed with all possible Expedition. He attended the Secretary of War two or three Times a Week, but could get no other Answer.

Tired with this, he presented a Petition to his Majesty; the Secretary of War happening to be present, the King reprimanded him;

‘ him; he excused himself, by saying, the  
‘ Hurry of Business, which, for his Majesty’s  
‘ Service, required immediate Dispatch, oc-  
‘ casioned the involuntary Delay, which Don  
‘ *Bernardo*, who knew very well what the  
‘ State of War was, might have considered  
‘ and allowed for, without troubling his Ma-  
‘ jesty about such a Trifle.

‘ Don *Bernardo* answered, the Ruin of his  
‘ Estate, and the leaving his Son a Beggar,  
‘ for having served his Majesty with a Zeal  
‘ which knew no Bounds, was no trifling  
‘ Matter to him.

‘ He spoke this with more Warmth, than  
‘ became him in the Presence of his Sovereign,  
‘ who coldly answered to the Secretary of  
‘ War—Let his Demand be paid, without  
‘ inspecting his Accounts, and see for the fu-  
‘ ture, I hear no such Reproaches; then turn-  
‘ ing his Back, went into his Closet, calling  
‘ to him the Secretary of War.

‘ The next Day Don *John* of *Austria* sent  
‘ for *Bernardo*, and told him, the King re-  
‘ sented so much the Liberty he had taken in  
‘ his Presence, that, had not that Prince in-  
‘ terposed, he had certainly been dismissed  
‘ the Service.

‘ Don *Bernardo* told him, the Delays he  
‘ had met with from the Secretary of War,  
‘ and the impertinent Answer he had made  
‘ before his Majesty.



' He then laid before that Prince his Ser-  
 ' vices, the Ransom he had been put to,  
 ' which obliged his parting with above one  
 ' Half of his Estate; the Money he had since  
 ' that advanced, which obliged him to mort-  
 ' gage the remaining Part; and added, that  
 ' all the Return he had hitherto experienced,  
 ' was a Present of two Thousand Pistoles, the  
 ' Command of a Regiment, which had eat  
 ' up his Fortune, and the empty Title of  
 ' Lieutenant-General; that his Pay was every  
 ' Real \* in Arrears.

' He entreated Don *John* to represent his  
 ' Scituation to his Majesty, which, with a  
 ' Prince of his consummate Wisdom, would  
 ' mitigate the Fault he had been guilty of,  
 ' and obtain him that Pardon from his Ma-  
 ' jesty, which he humbly begged.

' Don *John* shrugging up his Shoulders,  
 ' ~~said~~ his Case was hard, and he would speak  
 ' to his Majesty in his Behalf.

' Don *Bernardo*, justly irritated against the  
 ' Secretary of War, would no more go near  
 ' him, but waited the Issue of Don *John's*  
 ' Representation to his Majesty.

' About eight Days after, Don *John* sent  
 ' for, and told him, That the King, on the  
 ' Representation he had made, was gracious-  
 ' ly

\* Real, in *English* Ryal, is about six Pence  
 Half-penny.

‘ly pleased to express himself concerned for  
‘what he had suffered, and that he had not  
‘had Justice done him by his Ministers, con-  
‘formable to his Majesty’s Maxim of distin-  
‘guishing Men of Merit.

‘That the King had a-fresh ordered him  
‘to be paid out of the first Money the Se-  
‘cretary of War should receive for the Pay-  
‘ment of his Majesty’s Forces; and, putting  
‘this Order into his Hands, said, Go to,  
‘and shew that Minister this, which the King  
‘himself has signed; and, as I know the  
‘Exchequer at present is somewhat drained,  
‘and you may not immediately get your  
‘Demands paid, give me Leave to lend you  
‘the Sum contained in this Bill of *Perez*, the  
‘Banker.

‘Look upon me your Friend, and use no  
‘Ceremony in letting me know in what I  
‘may at any Time be serviceable. Having  
‘said this, he gave him that Banker’s Note  
‘for a Thousand Pistoles.

‘Don *Bernardo* went with the King’s Or-  
‘der to the Secretary of War, who told him,  
‘his Majesty might with more Ease order,  
‘than find Money for Payments; That he  
‘had none in the Office; That the Troops,  
‘in the *Netherlands*, destitute of Pay and  
‘Cloathing, must be provided for, and that  
‘he must have Patience, till he had, and  
‘could spare Money.

‘ In a Word, he found the King of *Spain*  
 ‘ had but little Interest with his Secretary of  
 ‘ War.

‘ He returned to Don *John*, who advised  
 ‘ him not to importune the King any more :  
 ‘ That the Duke *D’Alva* had imposed a Tax  
 ‘ upon the *Netherlands* of the tenth Penny,  
 ‘ upon all Merchandizes, which must raise  
 ‘ a prodigious Sum of Money ; the *Fle-*  
 ‘ *mings* be obliged to pay it, however re-  
 ‘ luctant, and that he would write to the said  
 ‘ Duke, to allot him his Demands on that  
 ‘ Tax : wherefore, as a Friend, he advised  
 ‘ his going to *Flanders*, where his Regiment  
 ‘ was, and take the Opportunity of accom-  
 ‘ panying the Duke of *Medina-Celi*, who was  
 ‘ commanded thither, the Count *de la Marc*  
 ‘ having seized the *Breil* in *Holland*.

‘ The Duke of *Medina-Celi* being ready  
 ‘ with the Fleet to set Sail, Don *Bernardo*  
 ‘ took Leave of his Majesty, having been  
 ‘ introduced by Don *John* to a private Au-  
 ‘ dience, he met with a gracious Reception,  
 ‘ and great Promises.

‘ He parted with the Fleet for the *Nether-*  
 ‘ *lands*, in one Thousand five hundred seven-  
 ‘ ty-two.

‘ Thus far his own Papers have guided  
 ‘ me in a Summary of his Life. His Chap-  
 ‘ lain, who put them and others into my  
 ‘ Hands, acquainted me, that in the Voyage  
 ‘ they

‘ they met with, and engaged the Confederate Fleet, by which they were defeated ;  
‘ that several of the King’s Ships were taken,  
‘ in particular that, on board of which was  
‘ Don *Bernardo* and himself.

‘ That the former died of his Wounds,  
‘ two Days after the Engagement.

‘ That he, the Chaplain, was exchanged  
‘ in few Months: That, at his Return to  
‘ *Estella*, he found the Mortgagee had taken  
‘ Possession of that Estate, and turned Don  
‘ *Bernardo*’s Son, myself and Sister into the  
‘ Streets ; and that we were received in different Hospitals for Orphans: He, the  
‘ Canon, with his Sister, being sent to that of  
‘ *Segura*, the Place of their Nativity ; and  
‘ the Son of Don *Bernardo* taken into that  
‘ of *Estella* ; not one of their Relations inter-  
‘ posing \* or taking the least Notice of  
‘ them.

‘ Having thus gone through the Life of  
‘ my Uncle, Don *Bernardo*, descended from  
‘ the second Son of Count *Ximenes*, I shall  
‘ now proceed to that of my Father.

‘ Don *Sancho* was of a very different Cast  
‘ of Mind, giving himself entirely to Study ;  
‘ and unhappily to that of the Philosopher’s  
‘ Powder of Projection, the Universal Medi-  
‘ cine,

\* The *Spaniards* call this Relation, as do the  
*Welsh*, Uncle.

‘ cine, or *Magnum Opus*; and if the reducing Gold to nothing is a certain Sign, that the Philosopher is in a right Process, my Father certainly was in the infallible Way; for his Crucibles and Experiments soon devoured all his Money, and swallowed, by Degrees one Piece of Land after another, his whole Estate.

‘ \* *Trevisan, Zacharius, Geber, Zeunon, Raymond Lullius*, and others of the Sages employed him Day and Night; and not only consumed his Fortune, but exhausted his Health, while he thought himself the happiest Man breathing, in the near Prospect of obtaining the precious Stone, which would afford him more than the *Peruvian* Mines, and prolong Life, exempt from all Attacks of such Distempers, as make Havock of the rest of Mankind.

‘ A *German*, who was his Co-operator, had indeed the Secret to make Gold, almost as fast as my Father could destroy it; for he went off with large Sums, as ’tis said, though nobody could ever make any Impression on the Mind of *Don Sancho* to his Prejudice.

‘ He would not allow the least Thing to be hinted, which tended to the disabusing him, with Regard to that Philosopher, who  
‘ was,

• Books treating of the Art of Transmutation:

‘ was, in his Opinion, not only one of  
 ‘ the greatest, but one of the best Men  
 ‘ breathing.

‘ My Mother and Relations, who saw  
 ‘ the impending Ruin, endeavoured, in vain,  
 ‘ to avert it.

‘ She luckily died before it reached us;  
 ‘ in a Word, *Dissolvants, Revivification, Co-*  
 ‘ *alition, Putrefaction, the Changing Bodies*  
 ‘ *into Spirits, and Spirits into Bodies, Subti-*  
 ‘ *lization, Sublimation, Spiritualization, Olea-*  
 ‘ *ginity, Incombustibility, and the like Terms*  
 ‘ of Art, which he had got by a great Ex-  
 ‘ pence of Time and Money, and were al-  
 ‘ most the only Words heard pronounced in  
 ‘ our Family, with the Expende of various  
 ‘ Processes, threw my Father into a Jail, his  
 ‘ Estate not being sufficient to pay his Debts:  
 ‘ in which, he soon paid that of Nature, and  
 ‘ left us to the Charity of Don *Bernardo*, at  
 ‘ whose Death my Sister and self were taken  
 ‘ into the Orphan-House at *Segura*, and the  
 ‘ Name of *Perez* there given us.

‘ Some two Years after, Don *Bernardo*’s  
 ‘ Chaplain coming to that Town, left with  
 ‘ the Curate the Papers, which have been  
 ‘ my Guide in the present Account.

‘ The Curate coming to visit one of the  
 ‘ Governors, happening to see, took a Lik-  
 ‘ ing to, and carrying me Home with him,  
 ‘ gave me what Education I have.

‘ When

‘ When at a proper Age, I took my Deacon’s Orders, and in Time was admitted to the Priesthood.

‘ My Sister was, when grown up, put to Service.

‘ Here the Canon *Perez* gave an Account of what is before related; and concluded with saying, what Light he had not from the Papers the Curate put into his Hands, he obtained by enquiring from the old People of *Sigüenza* and *Estella*.

## C H A P. XVI.

*Don Sancho rescues the Count de Leyva from imminent Danger.*

**M**Y Father had just finished, when Don *Pedro de Patillas* arrived with his Lady.

The two Advocates had called at his House to make him a Visit; and having acquainted him with the Discovery of our Family, which they were not enjoined to conceal, he came to make us his Compliments; and, I dare say, was very sincere in his Professions,

essions, as my Mother had the Honour to be related, and pretty nearly, to his Family.

At Supper Don *Pedro* proposed to hunt the Boar in my Patron's Woods the next Day, but my Father objected to it, saying, the Ladies ought to share the Diversion, secured from the Peril; wherefore proposed the deferring it, that a Stand might be set up for their seeing the Chase.

This every one came into; and the Countess *D' Albano* made my Father a Compliment of Thanks; adding, she should very willingly be a Spectator.

The next Day we all took Horse, with the Ladies in Company, to view the Woods; Don *Alphonso* having ordered some Carpenters and Farmers of his Tenants (who delighted in the Sport) with his own Huntsman, to meet us, chose out the properest Place for the Entertainment of the Ladies, and to erect a Stand. This was our Morning Business.

The Carpenters were left to their Work, and we returned to Dinner. In the Afternoon my Brother and I waited on Don *Pedro* a fishing, and the rest of the Company diverted themselves, some at Chess, others at Cards.

Scarce had the Dawn of the following Day appeared, when I was awakened by the Sound of the Horns, which called us to the Woods, where



where the Ladies had not long mounted their Stand, but the Dogs had a monstrous large Boar on Foot, which, by the placing of the Foils, they often drove before the Stand.

I never before had seen this Diversion, and own I was so animated with the Hallooing of the Sportsmen, the Cry of the Hounds, and the Re-ecchoed Sound of the Horns, that I thought nothing on Earth could afford an equal Pleasure.

I was often checked in my Career by an old Sportsman ordered to attend me; for I apprehended no Danger, as I was a Stranger to the Chase.

My Brother, I observed, rode in Places, where my Guide would not allow me; I asked the Reason; the Man answered, there was little Danger for him, where there would be a great Deal for me. He was indeed a young Gentleman, but an old, keen, knowing Huntsman.

Our Diversion lasted four Hours, but was very near ending in a most tragical Manner.

The Nature of the Beast is to fly his Pursuers as long as he finds himself able, and then he stands upon his Defence, sheltering himself with the Root or Trunk of some Tree, that his Enemies may not attack him behind; and in this Defence he often kills several Dogs, and those commonly the best, as they are the fiercest to attack : While he  
runs

runs, he will not turn out of his Way to hurt Man or Beast, if he is not wounded; but if he is, he immediately makes at the Aggressor, to revenge the Hurt.

—Don *Alphonso*, who was a knowing Huntsman, judging, by the Manner of the Boar's running, that he would soon be at Bay (I think that's the Sportsman's Term for the Boar's standing on his Defence) and willing to save his Dogs, spurred up, and lanced him behind the right Shoulder, just before the Ladies Stand; but reaching too far, he came over his Horse's Neck to the Ground. The Boar feeling the Wound, enraged and foaming, made at him as he lay, and had certainly cut out his Bowels with his Tusks, had not my Brother, who followed the Count *Leyva*, with his Boar-Spear, nailed the Beast dead to the Ground, when within two Foot of the Count, whose Danger caused the greatest Consternation among the Ladies; they all shrieked violently, and the Countess *Leyva* fell into a Swoon.

As there was a Rivulet near, my Brother ran, and fetched Water in his Hat, which being sprinkled in her Face, she began to recover: The Count ran up to the Stand, and supporting, spoke to her; his Safety recalled her Spirits, but she could not thoroughly shake off the Effects of her Fright in two or three Days.

The

The Countess being come to herself, my Brother drew his Couteau de Chasse cut off the Boar's Head, and with his Horn sounded his Death ; which brought to that Place all the Sportsmen, who had not got thither before.

My Guide hearing that particular Manner of Sound, told me the Boar was killed, and led me to the Place, as my Brother went upon the Stand holding the Head of the Boar, which, in my Opinion, was terrible to look at.

He addressed himself to the Countess *Leyva* in these few Words—Give me Leave, Madam, to lay the Head of your Enemy at your Feet ; which he did ; and the Countess, clasping him in her Arms, embraced him tenderly, saying—What do I not owe you, my dear *Sancho* ! more than my Fortune, nay, my Life can repay you ? And what do I not owe to Providence, in making me useful to your Ladyship and my dear Patron ? replied my Brother. Don *Alphonso* embraced, and called him his Preserver.

When we were informed of the Circumstances of the Accident, we all congratulated the Count *de Leyva* on his narrow Escape, and my Brother on his having been the happy Instrument.

Madam

Madam *de Leyva* being still indisposed, we returned to the Castle. My Brother received the Compliments made him on Account of this Accident, with great Modesty ; but told me, he never was sensible of so great Joy, as that he conceived in freeing our Patron from inevitable Death.

The Countess *Leyva* was persuaded to repose herself ; her Complaisance combating this, the Ladies said, they had all Need of Rest, having risen so much earlier than their usual Time, would follow her Example very willingly, and take only a Dish of Chocolate till Supper.

Don *Pedro* staid four Days at *Leyva* ; and, returning to his own Scite, invited all the Company to pass some Part of the Summer with him : but, being informed of our intended Journey to *Madrid*, insisted on the Ladies, my Uncle and Don *Scipio* waiting our Return at his House, which they were obliged to promise, and agreed to go thither in few Days after our setting out ; which, every thing being ready, we did that very Week.

## C H A P. XVII.

*Don Alphonso arrives at Madrid.*

**W**E met with nothing worthy of Notice in our Journey. At our Arrival we went to a House taken for us by Don *Alphonso's* Servant, who had been sent before to that End.

We reposed ourselves three Days, in which Time the ablest Advocates had been consulted in the Method proper for my Father to take, for the being acknowledged Count *de Ximenes*.

They were unanimous in their Opinion that he ought to proceed by Petition to his Majesty, setting forth his Title, and praying to be admitted to the Rank of a *Titulado*, in that Rank, which was his Birth-right.

This Petition, said they, his Majesty will refer to his Advocate General, who will call to his Assistance all the King's Counsellors, with the Heralds at Arms; examine the Proofs, together with them, and make Report to the King, who, if it is in your Favour, will, by Letter to the *Cortes*, setting forth

forth the whole Matter, order you to be received in the Quality of a *Titulado*, and to take Place in the Rank your Family held:

That I may trouble my Reader no more on this Subject, I shall here conclude it in few Words; my Father was introduced by the Duke *D'Ossuna*, requested by Don *Alphonso*, and presented his Petition to his Majesty.

The Proceedings were as the Advocates had lain them down. After two Months canvassing the Proofs, and examining the Archives, a Report was made in Favour of my Father's Claim, and he consequently admitted to the Title of Count *de Ximenes*.

His Majesty, to whom my Brother and self were presented, did him the Honour to congratulate him, and receive us very graciously; we were visited by all the Quality of *Madrid*, to pay us their Compliments.

The King, who perfectly remembered my Father, told him one Day, that he designed Count *Ximenes* should carry with him a Mark of his Favour in the Cross of *Calatrava*.

My Father thanked his Majesty for the intended Honour; but added if he would be graciously pleased to bestow the Cross on his elder Son, he should esteem it the highest Mark of his Royal Bounty; that he himself was in the Decline of Life, and his Son possibly had many Years to acknowledge his Majesty's

Majesty's Goodness, and to dedicate to his Service.

Well, said the King, we will give the Red-Cross to Don *Sancho*, which his Majesty was graciously pleased to do some few Days after.

While my Father was taken up in his Affairs, my Brother and I, having made a pretty general Acquaintance, by constantly attending the Drawing-room, were every Night engaged at one or other Assembly, Ball or Masquerade, after the Play was done. We had, one Night in particular, been at the Count *de Torre-Leone's* House; were returning from thence about Half an Hour past twelve, and within twenty Paces of Home, when, by the Light of the Flambeaux our Servants carried, we perceived a Gentleman who defended himself against three Assailants.

We stopped the Coach, and jumping out, ran to the Assistance of the weaker Side. The Aggressors, finding this Reinforcement, began to give Way, two them of especially; he that made the greatest Resistance, was the Person whom my Brother engaged.

Our Servants immediately alarmed our Family, and Don *Alphonso*, with my Father attended by several Domestics, flew to our Succour, had we wanted it; but two of the three, seeing the Lights, left the Field of Battle

Battle with some Precipitation; the third, whom my Brother had wounded in the Breast, and near his Groin, being surrounded, was taken, disarmed and carried to our House, whether we invited the Stranger, whom we had rescued, and who had also received a Hurt in the Side.

When we were in the Parlour, the Gentleman fainted. A Surgeon had before been sent for, who came in few Minutes, as he lived near us, and dressed both the wounded Men, whom he ordered to be put to Bed, saying to the Person who was one of the Assailants—Sir, I would have you turn your Thoughts to another World; I should think myself guilty of the Loss of your Soul, if I did not advise your getting a Confessor; for 'tis impossible you can live. He told the young Gentleman, that he was in no Danger, if he kept himself from Cold.

They were both put to Bed in our House. The Gentleman who was very young, begged we would oblige him, in sending a Servant to Don *Geronimo Hissopillo* in *Calle-Mayor*, to acquaint him, that he was engaged with us, and should not go Home that Night; but to conceal the Reason, for Fear, said he, of putting my Mother into a Fright, and troubling your House with her coming hither at this unseasonable Hour.



May I, said the other, entreat the Favour of a Confessor being sent for? though I doubt a Death-bed Repentance, after a continued Course of Wickedness, will little avail me; but God is infinite in his Mercy, as well as in his other divine Attributes. My Name is *Angelo della Gamba*. The Duke d'*Offuna's* Son is a Coward; and I fall by the Hands of a Boy.

A *Dominican* Monk came, heard this poor Man's Confession, administered him the Sacraments; and, about seven in the Morning, he desired the Servant who sat with him, to ask the Favour of seeing his Master.

Don *Alphonso* and my Father went to him. Gentlemen, said he, I thank your Charity to the vilest Wretch on the Face of this Earth, which I am upon the Point of quitting, and, should have left with a much easier Conscience, had not that infamous Wretch, Don *Carlos* — — prevailed on me to accompany him.

I am, by Birth, a *Roman*; my Profession, a Bravo, a Murderer. This detestable Trade of living by Blood, I followed several Years with Impunity, as I never was detected; but at last hired to murder Don *Pedro de Patillos*, Nephew to the *Spanish* Ambassador at *Rome*, I was, by what means I can't say, discovered, seized and prevented.

I found Mercy, when I deserved and expected none. This wrought on me to examine, abhor my past Life, and employ the rest of my Days in repenting my Sins. This pious Resolution I kept, till my evil Genius threw me in the Way of Don *Carlos* at *Rome*, on his Travels. He persuaded me to follow him; and by so doing, I returned, like a Dog to his Vomit.——The young Gentleman we last Night designed to dispatch, makes honourable Addresses to Doria *Isabella Marquina*, with whom Don *Carlos*——has taken it in his Head to be in Love, and whom he intends to debauch by violent, if he cannot prevail by fair Means. I can no more——If there is Mercy for me——then——Here he expired.

The Surgeon came, dressed the Gentleman, and gave Hopes of his being able to quit the House in a Week; for, though large, it was but a Flesh Wound; and he perceived no Symptoms of a Fever.

About Eleven o'Clock a Servant came from Don *Geronimo Hissopillo*, to know, if his Father might expect Don *Henry*, so was the wounded Gentleman named, at Dinner.

My Father answered the Servant, that he would wait on Don *Geronimo*, and acquaint him with his Reason, why he begged Leave to detain his Son.

Accordingly he took Coach, and drove to that Gentleman's House. By Degrees he acquainted him with what had happened the preceding Night, and with the Assurances the Surgeon gave of, Don *Henry* being in no Danger.

Don *Geronimo*, whose Person my Father thought he had formerly been acquainted with, having made the Acknowledgments, which every Gentleman would, in a like Case, desired Leave to wait on Count *Ximenes* (the Title my Father was then known by) to see Don *Henry*.

After some Stay in the young Gentleman's Chamber, and a pretty long Discourse with the Surgeon, repeating his Thanks, he took Leave, desiring Permission for his Wife also to visit her Son.

He was answered, That he commanded the House, and the Service of every one in it. Having, when he left his House, ordered his own Coach to follow him, (embracing my Brother and me) he returned Home, and acquainted his Lady with the Accident in the most cautious Terms; but all his Care and Assurances of Don *Henry's* Wound being but slight, could not prevent her Alarms.

She flew to our House; and, clasping her Son round the Neck, bedewed his Face with her Tears, staid till Night by his Side,  
and

and would have sat up with him, had not the Surgeon told her, she would retard his Cure, by the visible Concern her own gave him. She was at length persuaded to go Home, and promise to come no more near him for four Days.

One of our Servants, by my Father's Orders, enquired of one who attended the Lady, if Don *Geronimo* was not of *Catalonia*? being answered he was; Master of a plentiful Estate, and with his own Patrimony, and the King's Bounty, one of the richest Cavalleros of their Country. My Father recollected he had often seen him at Court (when he himself was in public Affairs) and recalled his Story.

In the Interim, Don *Alphonso* and Count *Ximenes* acquainted the Magistrates with what had happened.

They sent for the Corpse, and formally condemned it to be exposed on a Wheel in the high Way, as unworthy of Christian Burial.

The Bravo's Wife came to our House, to entreat Don *Alphonso's* Interest to reverse the Sentence.

He answered, it was impossible; that, as to her particular, if she would come to him, she should be provided for during our Stay in *Madrid*; that he was satisfied, Don *Pedro de Patillos* would give her a Support for the

Remainder of her Days, and that he would carry her with him to that Nobleman.

The Woman, who was very little afflicted at the Death of her Husband, which she daily expected to hear, joyfully accepted the Offer; and Don *Pedro* settled a Pension on her for Life.

*F I N I S.*

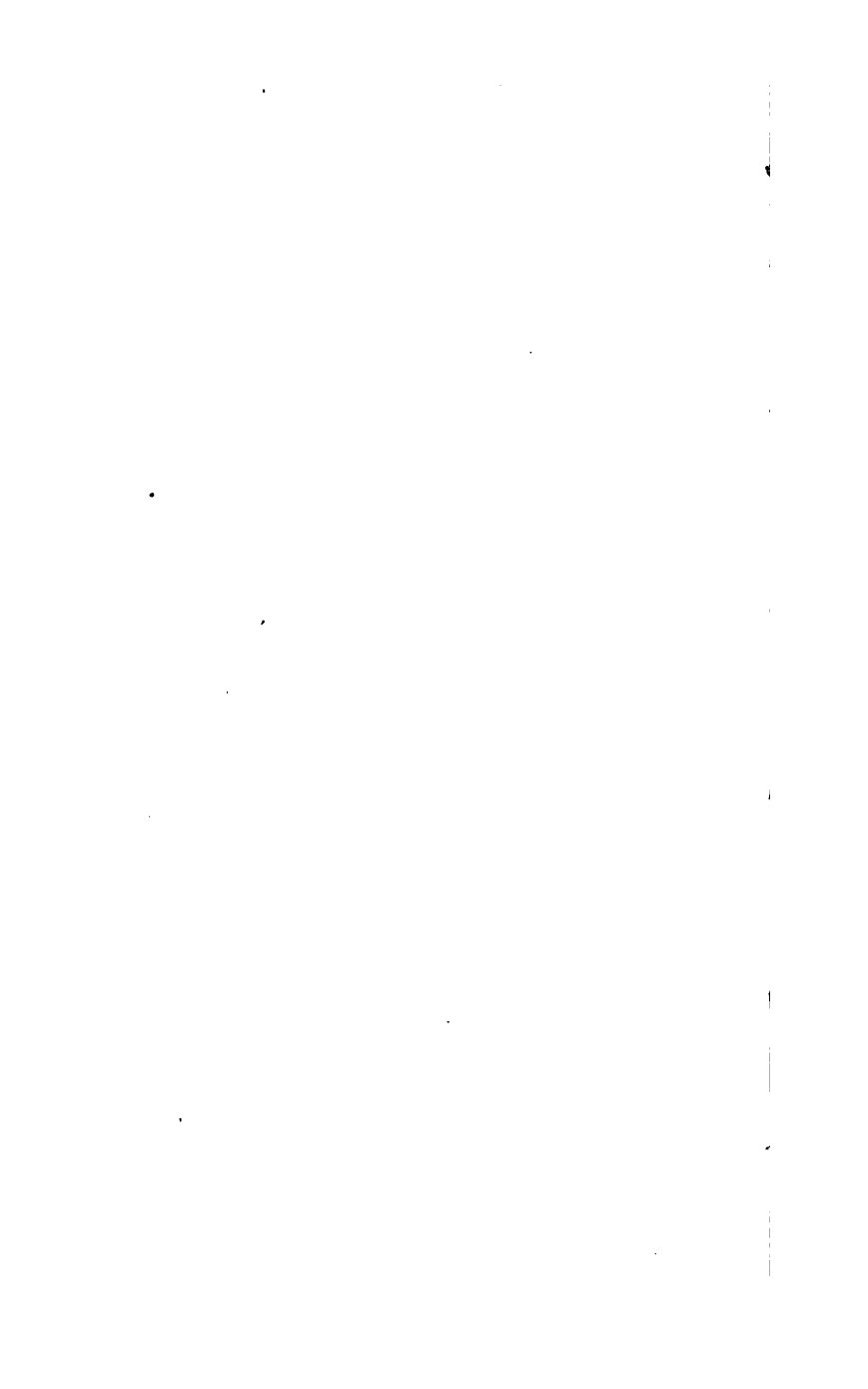


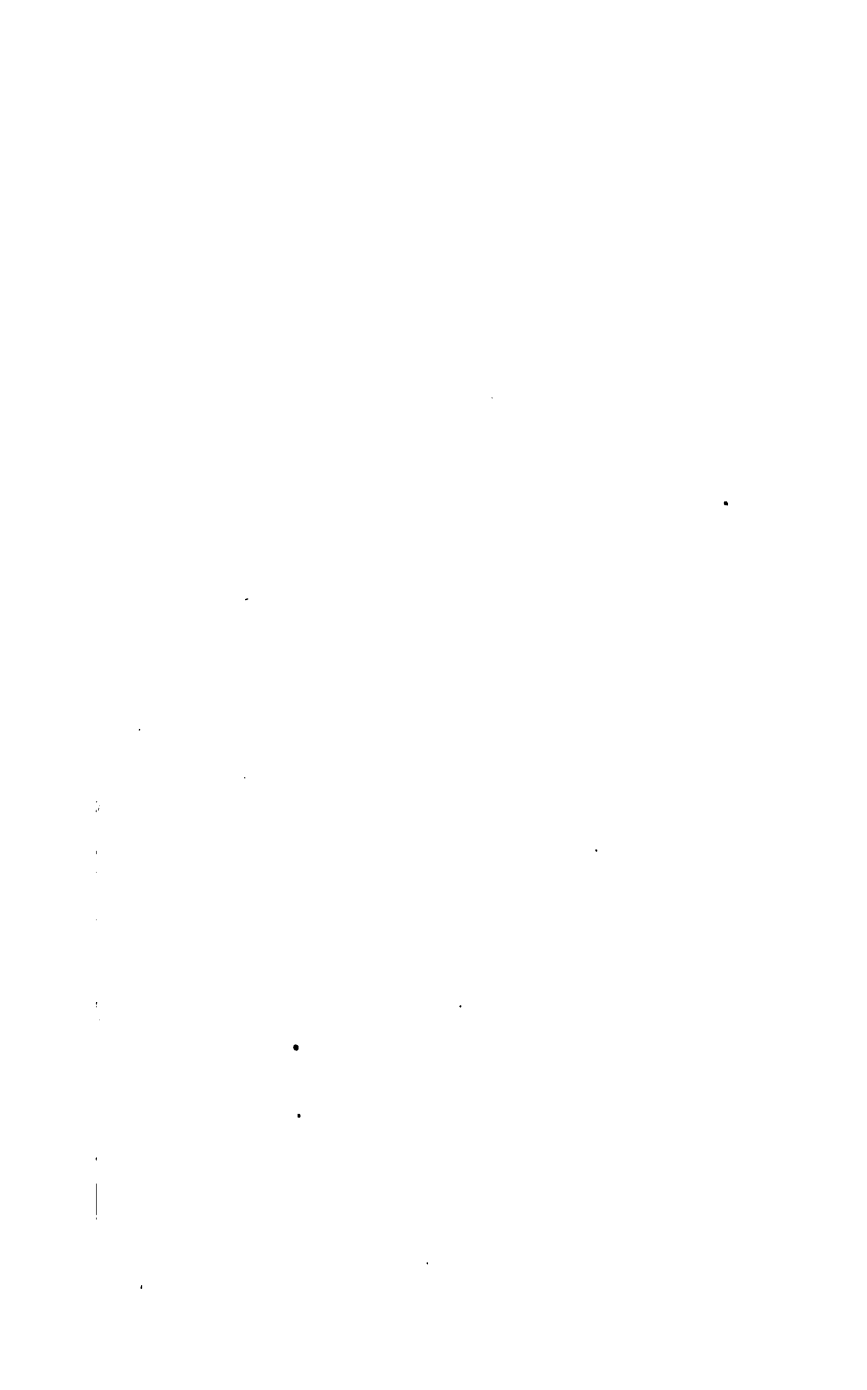
---

Printed by C. JEPHSON, in *Wine-Office-Court, Fleet-Street.*

---









**THE NEW YORK PUBLIC**  
**REFERENCE DEPARTMENT**

**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

FEB 21 1917

MAY 8 1917

